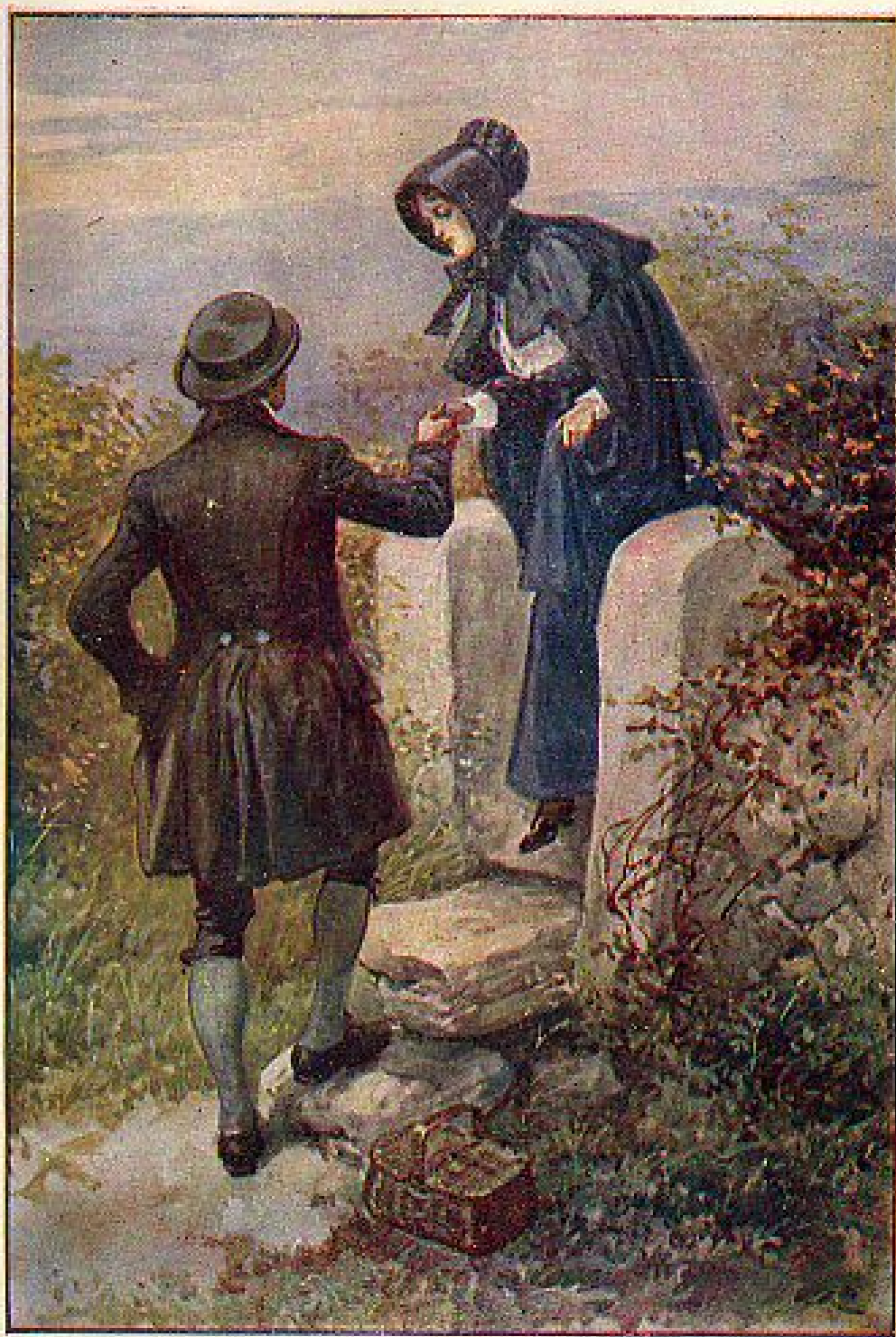


ADAM BEDE



BY *George Eliot*

Adam Bede

1. [Adam Bede](#)
2. [Table of Contents](#)

Adam Bede

Eliot, George, 1819-1880

This book was produced in EPUB format by the Internet Archive.

The book pages were scanned and converted to EPUB format automatically. This process relies on optical character recognition, and is somewhat susceptible to errors. The book may not offer the correct reading sequence, and there may be weird characters, non-words, and incorrect guesses at structure. Some page numbers and headers or footers may remain from the scanned page. The process which identifies images might have found stray marks on the page which are not actually images from the book. The hidden page numbering which may be available to your ereader corresponds to the numbered pages in the print edition, but is not an exact match; page numbers will increment at the same rate as the corresponding print edition, but we may have started numbering before the print book's visible page numbers. The Internet Archive is working to improve the scanning process and resulting books, but in the meantime, we hope that this book will be useful to you.

The Internet Archive was founded in 1996 to build an Internet library and to promote universal access to all knowledge. The Archive's purposes include offering permanent access for researchers, historians, scholars, people with disabilities, and the general public to historical collections that exist in digital format. The

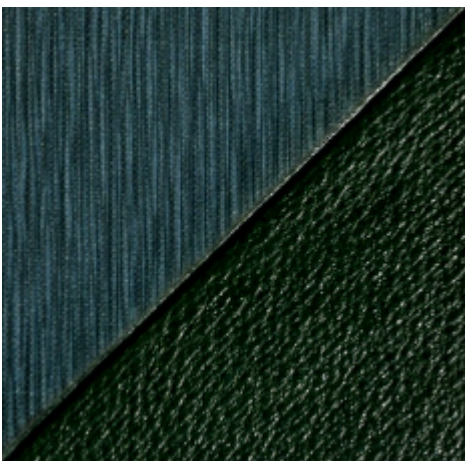
Internet Archive includes texts, audio, moving images, and software as well as archived web pages, and provides specialized services for information access for the blind and other persons with disabilities.

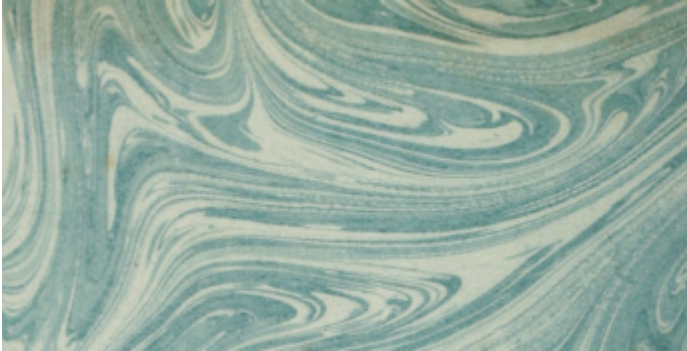
Created with abby2epub (v.1.7.6)



l m 1 1

tmmd





■tf.,/jl.

LIBRARY OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF ILLINOIS
AT URBANA-CHAMPAIGN
823

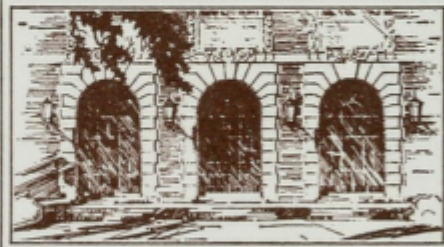
AT URBANA-CHAMPAIGN

823

C88a

1859

v.1



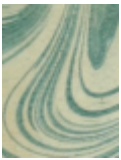


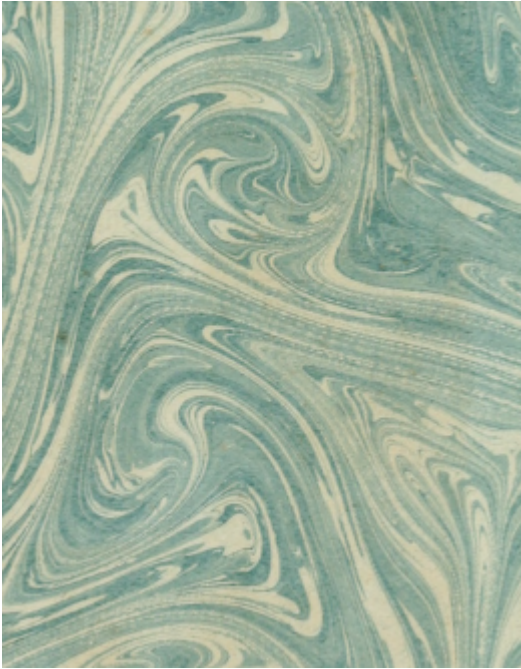
>

>!

^V

'^"'^V





%-j^

C ih'-^

m



iu

The person charging this material is responsible for its return to the library from which it was withdrawn on or before the Latest Date stamped below.

Theft, mutilation, and underlining of books are reasons for disciplinary action and may result in dismissal from the University. To renew call Telephone Center, 333-8400

UNIVERSITY OF ILLINOIS LIBRARY AT URBANA-CHAMPAIGN

ljl

k. ^>

BUILDING U

E.PNW.

OCT 2 6 i:)g2

L161—O-1096

Digitized by the Internet Archive

in 2010 with funding from

University of Illinois Urbana-Champaign

<http://www.archive.org/details/adambede01eli>

V.I CONTENTS OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

BOOK FIRST.

CHAP. PAGE

I. THE WORKSHOP ^

n. THE PREACHING 17

ni. AFTER THE PREACHING 54

rV. HOME AND ITS SORROWS 66

V. THE RECTOR 94

VT. THE HALL FARM 127

VII. THE DAIRY 150

Vin. A VOCATION 160

IX. HETTY'S WORLD 176

X. DINAH VISITS LISBETH 189

XI. IN THE COTTAGE 212

Xn. IN THE WOOD 228

XIII. EVENING IN THE WOOD 249

XIV. THE RETURN HOME 259

XV. THE TWO BED-CHAMBERS 276

XYI. LINKS 301

BOOK FIRST

ADAM BEDE.

CHAPTER I.

THE WOEKSHOP.

With a single drop of iik for a mirror, tlie Egyptian sorcerer undertakes to reveal to any chance comer far-reacliing visions of the past. This is what I undertake to do for you, reader. With this droj) of ink at the end of my pen I will show you the roomy workshop of Mr Jonathan Burge, carpenter and builder in the village of Hayslope, as it appeared on the eighteenth of June, in the year of our Lord 1799.

The afternoon sun was warm on the five workmen there, busy upon doors and mndow-frames and wainscoting. A scent of pine-wood from a tent-like pile of planks outside the open door

VOL. I. A

2 ADAM BEDK

mingled itself with the scent of the elder-bushes which were spreading their summer snow close to the open window opposite; the slanting sunbeams shone through the transparent shavings that flew before the steady plane, and lit up the fine grain of the oak panelling which stood propped against the wall. On a heap of those soft shavings a rough grey shepherd-dog had made himself a pleasant bed, and was lying with his nose between his fore-paws, occasionally wrinkling his brows to cast a glance at the tallest of the five workmen, who was carving a shield in the centre of a wooden mantelpiece. It was to this workman that the strong barytone belonged which was heard above the sound of plane and hammer sincrino—

"Awake, my soul, and -^with the sun Thy daily stage of duty run;
Shake off dull sloth"

Here some measurement was to be taken which required more concentrated attention, and the sonorous voice subsided into a low whistle; but it presently broke out again with renewed vigour—

" Let all thy converse be sincere, Thy conscience as the noonday clear."

Such a voice could only come from a broad chest,

ADAM BEDE. d

and the broad chest belonged to a large-boned muscular man nearly six feet high, with a back so flat and a head so well poised that when he drew himself up to take a more distant survey of his work, he had the air of a soldier standing at ease. The sleeve rolled up above the elbow showed an arm that was likely to win the prize for feats of strength; yet the long supple hand, with its broad fingertips, looked ready for works of skill. In his tall stalwartness Adam Bede was a Saxon, and justified his name ; but the jet-black hair, made the more noticeable by its contrast with the light paper cap, and the keen glance of the dark eyes that shone from under strongly marked, prominent, and mobile eyebrows indicated a mixture of Celtic blood. The face was large and roughly hewn, and when in repose had no other beauty than such as belongs to an expression of good-humoured honest intelligence.

It is clear at a glance that the next workman is Adam's brother. He is nearly as tall; he has the same type of features, the same hue of hair and complexion; but the strength of the family likeness seems only to render more conspicuous the remarkable difference of expression both in form and face.

ft ADAM BEDE.

Setli's broad shoulders have a slight stoop ; his eyes are grey; his eyebrows have less prominence and more repose than his brother's ; and his glance, instead of being keen, is confiding and benignant. He has thrown off his paper cap, and you see that his hair is not

thick and straight, like Adam's, but thin and wavy, allowing you to discern the exact contour of a coronal arch that predominates very decidedly over the brow.

The idle tramps always felt sure they could get a co2)per from Seth; they scarcely ever spoke to Adam.

The concert of the tools and Adam's voice was at last broken by Seth, who, lifting the door at which he had been working intently, j^laced it against the wall and said—

" There ! I've finished my door to-day, anyhow."

The workmen all looked up ; Jim Salt, a burly red-haired man, known as Sandy Jim, paused from his planing, and Adam said to Seth, with a sharp glance of surprise—

"What! dost think thee'st finished the door?"

"Ay, sure," said Seth, with answering surprise, " what's awanting to 'tV

" A loud roar of laughter from the other three workmen made Seth look round confusedly. Adam did not join in the laughter, but there was a slight smile on his face as he said, in a gentler tone than before—

" Why, thee 'st forgot the panels/'

The laughter burst out afresh as Seth clapped his hands to his head, and coloured over brow and crown.

" Hooray !" shouted a small" lithe fellow, called "Wiry Ben, running forward and seizing the door. " We'll hang up th' door at fur end o' th' shop an' write on't, ' Seth Bede, the Methody, his work/ Here, Jim, lend's hould o' th' red-pot/'

" Nonsense !" said Adam. " Let it alone, Ben Cranage. You'll mayhap be making such a slip yourself some day ; you'll laugh o' th' other

side o* your mouth then."

" Catch me at it, Adam. It 11 be a good while afore my head's full o' th' Methodies," said Ben.

"Nay, but it's often full o' drink, and that's worse."

Ben, however, had now got the " red-pot" in his hand, and was about to begin writing his inscription, making, by way of preliminary, an imaginary S in the air.

" Let it alone, will you ?" Adam called out, lading down his tools, striding up to Ben, and seizing his right shoulder. " Let it alone, or 111 shake the soul out o' your body!"

Ben shook in Adam's iron grasp, but, like a plucky small man as he was, he didn't mean to give in. With his left hand he snatched the brush from his powerless right, and made a movement as if he would perform the feat of writing with his left. In a moment Adam turned him round, seized his other shoulder, and pushing him along, pinned him against the wall. But now Seth spoke.

" Let be, Addy, let be. Ben will be joking. Why, he's i' the right to laugh at me—I canna help laughing at myself."

" I shan't loose him, till he promises to let the door alone," said Adam.

"Come, Ben, lad," said Seth in a persuasive tone, "don't let's have a quarrel about it. You know Adam will have his way. You may 's weU try to turn a- waggon in a narrow lane. Say you'U leave the door alone, and make an end on't."

" I binna frichted at Adam," said Ben, " but I donna mind sayin' as I'll let't alone at yare askin', Seth."

"Come, that's wise of you, Ben/' said Adam, laugliug and relaxing his grasp.

They all returned to their work now; but Wiry Ben, having had the worst in the bodily contest, was bent on retrieving that humiliation by a success in sarcasm.

"Which was ye thinkin' on, Seth," he began— "the pretty parson's face or her sarmunt, when ye forgot the panel?"

"Come and hear her, Ben," said Seth, goodhumouredly; "she's going to preach on the Green to-night; happen ye'd get something to think on yourself then, instead o' those wicked songs ye're so fond on. Ye might get religion, and that 'ud be the best day's earnings y' ever made."

"All i' good time for that, Seth; think about that when I'm agoin' to settle i' life; bachelors doesn't want such heavy earnins. Happen I shall do the coortin' an' the religion both together, as ye do, Seth; but ye wouldna ha' me get converted an' chop in atween ye an' the pretty preacher, an' carry her aff?"

"No fear o' that, Ben; she's neither for you nor for me to win, I doubt. Only you come and hear her, and you won't speak lightly on her again."

"Yell, I n half a mind t' lia' a look at her toBight, if there isn't good company at th' HollyBush. Amiat'll she tek for her text? Happen ye can tell me, Seth, if so be as I shouldna come up i' time for't. Will't be, 'What come ye out for to see? A prophetess? Yea, I say unto you, and more than a prophetess'—a uncommon pretty young woman."

"Come, Ben," said Adam, rather sternly, "jou let the words o' the Bible alone; you re going too far now."

"What! are ye a-tm[^]nin' roun', Adam? I thought ye war dead again th' women preachin', a while agoo?"

"Nay, I'm not turnin' noway. I said nought about the women preachin': I said, You let the Bible alone: you've got a jest-book, han't you, as

you're rare and proud on ? Keep your dirty fingers to that."

"AYhy, y'are gettin' as big a saint as Seth. Y're goin' to th' preachin' to-night, I should think. Ye'11 do finely t' lead the singin'. But I dun know what Parson Irwdne 'ull say at's gran' favright Adam Bede a- turnin' Methody."

" Never do you bother yourself about me, Ben.

ADAM BEDE. 9

I*m not a-goigug to turn Methodist any more nor you are—though it's like enough you'll turn to something worse. Mester Irwine's got more sense nor to meddle wi' people's doing as they like in rehigion. That's between themselves and God, as he's said to me many a time."

" Ay, ay ; but he's none so fond o' your dissenters, for all that."

" Maybe ; I'm none so fond o' Josh Tod's thick ale, but I don't hinder you from making a fool o' yourself wi't."

There was a laugh at this thrust of Adam's, but Seth said, very seriously,

" Nay, nay, Addy, thee mustna say as anybody's religion's like thick ale. Thee dostna believe but what the dissenters and the Methodists have got the root o' the matter as well as the church folks."

" Nay, Seth, lad ; I'm not for laughing at no man's religion. Let 'em follow their consciences, that's all. Only I think it 'ud be better if their consciences 'ud let 'em stay quiet i' the church— there's a deal to be learnt there. And there's such a thing as being over-sperital; we must have something beside Gospel i' this w^orld. Look at the canals, an' th' aqueducts, an' th' coal-pit engines.

10 ADAM BEDE.

and Arkwi'ight's mills there at Cromford; a man must learn sum mat beside Gospel to make them things, I reckon. But t' hear some o'

them preachers, you'd think as a man must be doing nothing all's life but shutting 's eyes and looking what's a-going on inside him. I know a man must have the love o' God in his soul, and the Bible's God's word. But what does the Bible say ? ^^^I"y, it says as God put his sperrit into the workman as built the tabernacle, to make him do all the carved work and things as wanted a nice hand. And this is my way o' looking at it: there's the sperrit o' God in all things and all times—weekday as well as Sunday—and i' the great works and inventions, and i' the figuring and the mechanics. And God helps us with our headpieces and our hands as well as with our souls; and if a man does bits o' jobs out o' working hours —builds a oven for 's wife to save her from going to the bakehouse, or scrats at his bit o' garden and makes two potatoes grow istancead o' one, he's doing more good, and he's just as near to God, as if he was running after some preacher and a-praying and a-groaning."

" Well done, Adam ! " said Sandy Jim, who had paused from his planing to shift liis planks while

ADAM BEDE. II

Adam was speaking ; " that's the best sarmunt I've beared this long while. By th' same token, my wife's a-bin a-plaguin' on me to build her a oven this twelvemont/'

" Tliere's reason in what thee say'st, Adam/' observ^ed Seth, gravely. " But thee know'st thyself as it's hearing the preachers thee find'st so much fault with as has turned many an idle fellow into an industrious un. It's the preacher as empties th' alehouse ; and if a man gets religion, he'U do his work none the worse for that/'

" On'y he'll lave the panels out o' th' doors sometimes, eh, Seth ? " said "VYiry Ben.

" Ah, Ben, you've got a joke again me as 11 last you your Life. But it isna religion as was i' fault there ; it was Seth Bede, as was allays a woolgathering chap, and religion hasna cm-ed him, the more's the pity."

" Ne'er heed me, Seth," said Wiry Ben, " y' are a downright good-hearted chap, panels or no panels ; an' ye donna set up your bristles at every bit o' fun, like some o' your kin, as is mayhap chverer."

" Seth, lad," said Adam, taking no notice of the sarcasm against himself, " thee mustna take me

12 ADAM BEDE.

unkind. I wasna driving at thee in what I said just now. Some 's got one way o' looking at things and some 's got another/'

" Nay, nay, Addy, thee mean'st me no unkindness," said Seth, " I know that well enough. Thee't like thy dog Gyi^—thee bark'st at me sometimes, but thee allays lick'st my hand after."

All hands worked on in silence for some minutes, until the church clock began to strike six. Before the first stroke had died away, Sandy Jim had loosed his plane and was reaching his jacket; Wiry Ben had left a screw half driven in, and thrown his screw-driver into his tool-basket; Mum Taft, who, true to his name, had kept silence throughout the previous conversation, had flung down his hammer as he was in the act of lifting it; and Seth, too, had straightened his back, and was putting out his hand towards his paper cap. Adam alone had gone on with his work as if nothing had happened. But observing the cessation of the tools, he looked up, and said, in a tone of indignation,

" Look there, now ! I can't abide to see men throw away their tools i' that way, the minute the clock begins to strike, as if they took no pleasure i' their work, and was afraid o' doing a stroke too much/"

ADAM BEDE. 13

Seth looked a little conscious, and began to be slower in his preparations for going, but Mum Taft broke silence, and said,

"Ay, ay, Adam lad, ye talk like a young un. "When y are six an' forty like me, istid o' six an' twenty, ye wanna be so flush o' workin' for nought."

" Nonsense," said Adam, still wrathful; " what's age got to do with it, I wonder ? Ye arena getting stiff yet, I reckon. I hate to see a man's arms drop down as if he was shot, before the clock's fairly struck, just as if he'd never a bit o' pride and delight in 's work. The very grindstone 'uU go on turning a bit after you loose it."

" Bodderation, Adam !" exclaimed Why Ben. " Lave a chap aloon, will 'ee. Ye war a-finding faut wi' preachers a while agoo—y' are fond enough o' preachin' yoursen. Ye may like work better nor play, but I like play better nor work ; that'll 'commodate ye—it laves ye th' moor to do."

With this exit speech, which he considered effective. Wiry Ben shouldered his basket and left the workshop, quickly followed by Mum Taft and Sandy Jim. Seth lingered, and looked wistfully at Adam, as if he expected him to say something.

14 ADAM BEDK

" Shalt go home before thee go'st to the preaching ?" Adam asked, looking up.

" Nay; I've got my hat and things at Will Maskery's. I shan't be home before going for ten. I'll happen see Dinah Morris safe home, if she's willing. There's nobody comes with her from Poyser's, thee know'st."

"Then I'll tell mother not to look for thee/' said Adam.

" Thee artna going to Poyser's thyself to-night ?" said Seth, rather timidly, as he turned to leave the workshop.

" Nay, I'm going to th' school."

Hitherto Gyp had kept his comfortable bed, only lifting up his head and watching Adam more closely, as he noticed the other workmen departing. But no sooner did Adam put his ruler in his pocket, and begin to twist his apron round his waist, than Gyp ran forward and looked up in his master's face with patient expectation. If Gyp had had a tail he would doubtless have wagged it, but being destitute of that vehicle for his emotions, he was like many other worthy personages, destined to appear more phlegmatic than nature had made him.

"What, art ready for the basket, eh. Gyp?" said

Adam, with the same gentle modulation of voice as when he spoke to Seth.

Gyp jumped and gave a short bark, as much as to say, "Of course." Poor fellow, he had not a great range of expression.

The basket was the one which on workdays held Adam's and Seth's dinner; and no official, walking in procession, could look more resolutely unconscious of all acquaintances than Gyp with his basket, trotting at his master's heels.

On leaving the workshop Adam locked the door, took the key out, and carried it to the house on the other side of the woodyard. It was a low house, with smooth grey thatch and buff walls, looking pleasant and mellow in the evening light. The leaded windows were bright and speckless, and the door-stone was as clean as a white boulder at ebb tide. On the door-stone stood a clean old woman, in a dark-striped linen gown, a red kerchief, and a linen cap, talking to some speckled fowls which appeared to have been drawn towards her by an illusory expectation of cold potatoes or barley. The old woman's sight seemed to be dim, for she did not recognise Adam till he said,

16 ADAM BEDE.

"Here's the key, Dolly; lay it down for me in the house, will you?"

" Ay, sure; but wunna ye come in, Adam ? Miss Mary's i' the house, an' Mester Burge 11 be back anon; he'd be glad t' ha' ye to supper wi'm, I'll he's warrand."

" No, Dolly, thank you; I'm off home. Good evening."

Adam hastened with long strides. Gyp close to his heels, out of the workyard, and along the highroad leading away from the village and do^vn to the valley. As he reached the foot of the slope, an elderly horseman, -with his portmanteau strapped behind him, stopped his horse when Adam had passed him, and turned round to have another long look at the stalwart workman in paper cap, leather breeches, and dark-blue worsted stockings.

Adam, unconscious of the admiration he was exciting, presently struck across the fields, and now broke out into the tune which had all day long been running in his head :

" Let all thy converse be sincere, Thy conscience as the noonday clear ; For God's all-seeing eye sun'eys Thy secret thoughts, thy works and ways."

CHAPTER 11.

THE PEEACHING.

About a quarter to seven there was an unusual appearance of excitement in the village of Hayslope, and through the whole length of its little street, from the Donnithorne Arms to the churchyard gate, the inhabitants had evidently been di'awn out of their houses by something more than the pleasure of louncrincf in the evenino-sunshine. The Donnithorne Arms stood at the entrance of the village, and a small farmyard and stackyard which flanked it, indicating that there was a pretty take of land attached to the inn, gave the traveller a promise of good feed for himself and his horse, which might well console him for the ignorance in which the weatherbeaten sign left him as to the heraldic bearings of that ancient family, the

Donnithomes. Mr Casson, the landlord, had been for some time standing at the door with his hands in his pockets, VOL. I. B

balancing himself on his heels and toes, and looking towards a piece of unenclosed ground, with a maple in the middle of it, which he knew to be the destination of certain grave-looking men and women whom he had observed passing at intervals.

Mr Casson's person was by no means of that common type which can be allowed to pass without description. On a front view it appeared to consist principally of two spheres, bearing about the same relation to each other as the earth and the moon: that is to say, the lower sphere might be said, at a rough guess, to be thirteen times larger than the upper, which naturally performed the function of a mere satellite and tributary. But here the resemblance ceased, for Mr Casson's head was not at all a melancholy-looking satellite, nor was it a "spotty globe," as Milton has irreverently called the moon; on the contrary, no head and face could look more sleek and healthy, and its expression, which was chiefly confined to a pair of round and ruddy cheeks, the slight knot and interruptions forming the nose and eyes being scarcely worth mention, was one of jolly contentment, only tempered by that sense of personal dignity which usually made itself felt in his attitude and bearing. This sense of dignity could hardly be

considered excessive in a man who had been butler to " the family " for fifteen years, and who, in his present high position, was necessarily very much in contact with his inferiors. How to reconcile his dignity with the satisfaction of his curiosity by walking towards the Green, was the problem that Mr Casson had been revolving in his mind for the last five minutes ; but when he had partly solved it by taking his hands out of his pockets, and thrusting them into the armholes of his waistcoat, by throwing his head on one side, and providing himself with an air of contemptuous indifference to whatever might fall under his notice, his thoughts were diverted by the approach of the horseman whom we lately saw pausing to have

another look at our friend Adam, and who now pulled up at the door of the Donnithorne Arms.

" Take off the bridle and give him a drink, ostler," said the traveller to the lad in a smock-frock, who had come out of the yard at the sound of the horse's hoofs.

" Why, what's up in your pretty village, landlord ? " he continued, getting down. " There seems to be quite a stir."

" It's a Methodist preaching, sir ; it's been gev hout as a young woman's a-going to preach on the

20 ADAM BEDE.

Green," answered Mr Casson, in a treble and wheezy voice, with a slightly mincing accent. "Will you please to step in, sir, an' tek somethink ?"

" No, I must be getting on to Drosseter. I only want a drink for my horse. And what does your parson say, I wonder, to a young woman preaching just under his nose ?"

" Parson Irwine, sir, doesn't live here; he lives at Brox'on, over the hill there. The parsonage here's a tumble-down place, sir, not fit for gentry to live in. He comes here to preach of a Sunday afternoon, sir, an' puts up his boss here. It's a grey cob, sir, an' he sets great store by 't. He's allays put up his boss here, sir, iver since before I bed the Donnithorne Arms. I'm not this countryman, you may tell by my tongue, sir. They're cur'ous talkers i' this country, sir ; the gentry's hard work to hunderstand 'em. I was brought hup among the gentry, sir, an' got the turn o' their tongue when I was a bye. Why, what do you think the folks here says for ' hevn't you?'—the gentry, you know, says 'hevn't you '—weU, the people about here says, ' hanna yey/ It's what they call the dileck as is spoke hereabout, sir. That's what I've heard Squu-e Donnithorne say many a time ; it's the dileck, says he."

ADAM BEDE. 21

" Ay, ay," said the stranger, smiling. " I know it very well. But you've not got many Methodists about here, surely—in this agricultural spot. I should have thought there would hardly be such a thino: as a Methodist to be found about here. You're all farmers, aren't you. The Methodists can seldom lay much hold on them."

" Why, sir, there's a pretty lot o' workmen round about, sir. There's Mester Burge as owns the timberyard over there, he underteks a good bit o' building an' repairs. An' there's the stone-pits not far off. There's plenty of emply in this country-side, sir. An' there's a fine batch o' Methodisses at Treddles'on— that's the market town about three mile off—youll maybe ha' come through it, sir. There's pretty nigh a score of 'em on the Green now, as come from there. That's where our people gets it from, though there's only two men of 'em in all Hayslope : that's Will Maskery, the wheehvright, and Seth Bede, a young man as works at the carpenterin'."

" The preacher comes from Treddleston, then, does she ?"

" Nay, sir, she comes out o' Stonyshire, pretty nigh thirty mile off. But she's a-visitin' hereabout at Mesfer Poyser's at the Hall Farm—it's

them barns an' big walnut trees, right away to the left, sir. She's own niece to Poyser's wife, an' they'll be fine an' vexed at her for making a fool of herself i' that way. But I've beared as there's no holding these Methodisses when the maggit's once got i' their head : many of 'em goes stark starin mad wi' their religion. Though this young woman's quiet enough to look at, by what I can make out; I've not seen her myself."

" WeU, I wish I had time to wait and see her, but I must get on. I've been out of my way for the last twenty minutes, to have a look at that place in the valley. It's Squire Donnithorne's, I suppose ?"

Yes, sir, that's Donnithorne Chase, that is. Fine hoaks there, isn't there, sir ? I should know what it is, sir, for I've lived butler there a-

going i' fifteen year. It's Captain Donnithorne as is th' heir, sir—Squire Donnithorne's grandson. He'll be comin' of hage this 'ay-'arvest, sir, an' we shall hev fine doins. He owns all the land about here, sir, Squire Donnithorne does."

" ^Yell, it's a pretty spot, whoever may own it," said the traveller, mounting his horse ; " and one meets some fine strapping fellows about too. I met as fine a young fellow as ever I saw in my life,

ADAM BEDE. 23

about half an hour ago, before I came up the hill—a carpenter, a tall broad-shouldered fellow with black hair and black eyes, marching along like a soldier. We want such fellows as he to lick the French."

" Ay, sir, that's Adam Bede, that is, I'll be bound—Thias Bede's son—everybody knows him hereabout. He's an uncommon clever stiddy fellow, an' wonderful strong. Lord bless you, sir—if you'll hexcuse me for saying so—he can walk forty mile a-day, an' lift a matter o' sixty ston'. He's an uncommon favourite wi' the gentry, sir ; Captain Donnithorne an' Parson Irwine meks a fine fuss wi' him. But he's a little lifted up an' peppery like."

" Well, good evening to you, landlord ; I must get on."

" Your servant, sir ; good evenin'."

The traveller put his horse into a quick walk up the village, but when he approached the Green, the beauty of the view that lay on his right hand, the singular contrast presented by the groups of villagers with the knot of Methodists near the maple, and perhaps yet more, curiosity to see the young female preacher, proved too much for his anxiety to get to the end of his journey, and he paused.

24 ADAM BEDE.

The Green lay at the extremity of the village, and from it the road branched off in two directions, one leading farther up the hill by the

church, and the other winding gently down towards the valley. On the side of the Green that led towards the church, the broken line of thatched cottages was continued nearly to the churchyard gate; but on the opposite, north-western side, there was nothing to obstruct the view of gently-swelling meadow, and wooded valley, and dark masses of distant hill. That rich undulating district of Loamshire to which Hayslope belonged, lies close to a grim outskirts of Stonyshire, overlooked by its barren hills as a pretty blooming sister may sometimes be seen linked in the arm of a rugged, tall, swarthy brother; and in two or three hours' ride the traveller might exchange a bleak treeless region, intersected by lines of cold grey stone, for one where his road wound under the shelter of woods, or up swelling hills, muffled with hedgerows and long meadowgrass and thick corn; and where at every turn he came upon some fine old country-seat nestled in the valley or crowning the slope, some homestead with its long length of barn and its cluster of golden ricks, some grey steeple looking out from

a pretty confusion of trees and thatch and dark-red tiles. It was just such a picture as this last that Hayslope church had made to the traveller as he began to mount the gentle slope leading to its pleasant uplands, and now from his station near the Green he had before him in one view nearly all the other typical features of this pleasant land. High up against the horizon were the huge conical masses of hill, like giant mounds intended to fortify this region of corn and grass against the keen and hungry winds of the north; not distant enough to be clothed in purple mystery, but with sombre greenish sides visibly specked with sheep, whose motion was only revealed by memory, not detected by sight; wooded from day to day by the changing hours, but responding with no change in themselves—left for ever grim and sullen after the flush of morning, the winged gleams of the April noonday, the parting crimson glory of the ripening summer sun. And directly below them the eye rested on a more advanced line of hawthorn woods, divided by bright patches of pasture or furrowed crops, and not yet deepened into the uniform leafy curtain of high summer, but still showing the warm tints of the young oak and the tender green of the

ash and lime. Then came the valley, where the woods grew thicker, as if they had rolled down and hurried together from the patches left smooth on the slope, that they might take the better care of the tall mansion which lifted its parapets and sent its faint blue summer smoke among them. Doubtless there was a large sweep of park and a broad glassy pool in front of that mansion, but the swelling slope of meadow would not let our traveller see them from the village green. He saw instead a foreground which was just as lovely—the level sunlight lying like transparent gold among the gently curving stems of the feathered grass and the tall red sorrel, and the white umbels of the hemlocks lining the bushy hedgerows. It was that moment in summer when the sound of the scythe being whetted makes us cast more leisurely; looks at the flower-sprinkled tresses of the meadows.

He might have seen other beauties in the landscape if he had turned a little in his saddle and looked eastward, beyond Jonathan Burge's pasture and woodyard towards the green cornfields and walnut trees of the HaU Farm ; but apparently there was more interest for him in the living groups close at hand- Every generation in the village was

there, from " old Feyther Taft" in his brown worsted night-cap, who was bent nearly double, but seemed tough enough to keep on his legs a long while, leaning on his short stick, down to the babies with their little round heads lolling forward in quilted linen caps. Now and then there was a new arrival; perhaps a slouching labourer, who, having eaten his supper, came out to look at the unusual scene with a slow bovine gaze, willing to hear what any one had to say in explanation of it, but by no means excited enough to ask a question. But all took care not to join the Methodists on the Green, and identify themselves in that way with the expectant audience, for there was not one of them that would not have disclaimed the imputation of having come out to hear the " preacherwoman,"—they had only come out to see " what war a-goin' on, like." The men were chiefly gathered in the neighbourhood of the blacksmith's shop. But do not imagine them gathered in a knot. Villagers never swarm : a whisper is unknown among them, and they seem almost as incapable of an

undertone as a cow or a stag. Your true rustic turns his back on his interlocutor, throwing a question over his shoulder as if he meant to run away from the answer,

and walking a step or two farther off when the interest of the dialogue culminates. So the group in the vicinity of the blacksmith's door was by no means a close one, and formed no screen in front of Chad Cranaae, the blacksmith himself, who stood with his black brawny arms folded, leaning against the door-post, and occasionally sending forth a bellowing laugh at his own jokes, giving them a marked preference over the sarcasms of Wiry Ben, who had renounced the pleasures of the Holly Bush for the sake of seeing life under a new form. But both styles of wit were treated with equal contempt by Mr Joshua Eann. Mr Eann's leathern apron and subdued griminess can leave no one in any doubt that he is the village shoemaker; the thrusting out of his chin and stomach, and the twirling of his thumbs, are more subtle indications, intended to prepare unwary strangers for the discovery that they are in the presence of the parish clerk. "Old Joshway," as he is irreverently called by his neighbours, is in a state of simmering indignation ; but he has not yet opened his lips except to say in a resounding bass undertone, like the tuning of a violoncello, " Sehon, King of the Amorites : for His mercy endureth for ever; and Og the King of Basan : for His mercy

endureth for ever/'—a quotation which may seem to have slight bearing on the present occasion, but, as with every other anomaly, adequate knowledge will show it to be a natural sequence. Mr Rami was inwardly maintaining the dignity of the Church in the face of this scandalous irruption of Methodism, and as that dignity was bound up with his own sonorous utterance of the responses, his argument naturally suggested a quotation from the psalm he had read the last Sunday afternoon.

The stronger curiosity of the women had drawn them quite to the edge of the Green, where they could examine more closely the quaker-like costume and odd deportment of the female Methodists. Underneath the maple there was a small cart which had been

brought from the wheelwright's to serve as a pulpit, and round this a couple of benches and a few chairs had been placed. Some of the Methodists were resting on these, with their eyes closed, as if wrapt in prayer or meditation. Others chose to continue standing, and had turned their faces towards the villagers with a look of melancholy compassion, which was highly amusing to Bessy Cranage, the blacksmith's buxom daughter, known to her neighbours as Chad's Bess, who wondered

30 ADAM BEDE.

" why the folks war a-mekin' faces a that'ns." Chad's Bess was the object of peculiar compassion, because her hair, being turned back under a cap which was set at the top of her head, exposed to view an ornament of which she was much prouder than of her red cheeks, namely, a pair of large round earrings -with false garnets in them, ornaments contemned not only by the Methodists, but by her own cousin and namesake Timothy's Bess, Avho, with much cousinly feeling, often wished " them earrings" might come to good.

Timothy's Bess, though retaining her maiden appellation among her familiars, had long been the wife of Sandy Jim, and possessed a handsome set of matronly jewels, of which it is enough to mention the heavy baby she was rocking in her arms, and the sturdy fellow of five in knee-breeches and red legs, who had a rusty milk-can round his neck by way of drum, and was very carefully avoided by Chad's small terrier. This young olive-branch, notorious under the name of Timothy's Bess's Ben, being of an inquiring disposition, unchecked by any false modesty, had advanced beyond the group of women and children, and was walking round the Methodists, looking up in their faces with his mouth wide open, and beating his stick against the

ADA3I BEDE. 31

milk-can by way of musical accompaniment. But one of the elderly women bending down to take bim by tbe shoulder, with an air of grave remonstrance, Timothy's Bess's Ben first kicked out

vigorously, then took to his heels and sought refuge behind his father's legs.

"Ye gallows young dog," said Sandy Jim, with some paternal pride, "if ye dunna keep that stick quiet, I'll tek it from ye. What d'ye mane by kickin' fouLks?"

"Here ! gie 'm here to me, Jim," said Chad Cranage; "I'll tie 'm up an' shoe 'm as I do th' bosses. "Well, Mester Casson," he continued, as that personage sauntered up towards the group of men, "how are ye t' naight ? Are ye coom t' help groon? The' say folks aUays groon when they're hearkenin' to th' JMethodys, as if the' war bad i' th' inside. I mane to groon as loud as your cow did th' other naight, an' then the praicher 'uU think I'm i' th' raight way."

"I'd advise you not to be up to no nonsense, Chad," said Mr Casson, with some dignity; "Poyser wouldn't like to hear as liis wife's niece was treated any ways disrespectful, for all he mayn't be fond of her taking on herself to preach."

"Ay, an' she's a pleasant-looking un too," said

32 ADAM BEDE.

Wiiy Ben. "I'll stick up for the pretty women preacliiii; I know they'd persuade me over a deal sooner nor th' ugly men. I shouldna wonder if I tui'n Methody afore the night's out, an' begin to coort the preacher, like Seth Bede/'

"Why, Seth's lookin' rether too high, I should think," said Mr Casson. "This woman's kin wouldn't like her to demean herself to a common carpenter."

"Tchu !" said Ben, with a long treble intonation, "what's folks's kin got to do wi't ?—Not a chip. Poyser's wife may turn her nose up an' forget bygones, but this Dinah Morris, the' tell me, 's as poor as iver she was—works at a mill, an's much ado to keep hersen. A strappin' young carpenter as is a ready-made Methody, like Seth, wouldna be

a bad match for her. Why, Poyzers make as big a fuss wi' Adam Bede as if he war a newy o' their own."

"Idle talk! idle talk!" said Mr Joshua Eann. "Adam an' Seth's two men; you wanna fit them two wi' the same last."

"Maybe," said Wiry Ben, contemptuously, "but Seth's the lad for me, though he war a Methody twice o'er. I'm fair beat wi' Seth, for I've been

ADAM BEDE. 33

teazin' liim iver sin' we've been workin' together, an' he bears me no more malice nor a lamb. An' he's a stont-hearted feller too, for when we saw the old tree all a-fire, a-comin' across the fields one night, an' we thought as it war a boguy, Seth made no more ado, but he up to't as bold as a constable. Why, there he comes out o' Will Maskery's; an' there's Will hisself, lookin' as meek as if he couldna knock a nail o' th' head for fear o' hurtin't. An' there's the pretty preacher-woman! My eye, shea's got her bonnet off. I mun go a bit nearer."

Several of the men followed Ben's lead, and the traveller pushed his horse on to the Green, as Dinah walked rather quickly, and in advance of her companions, towards the cart under the maple tree. While she was near Seth's tall figure she looked short, but when she had mounted the cart, and was away from all comparison, she seemed above the middle height of woman, though in reality she did not exceed it—an effect which was due to the slimness of her figure, and the simple line of her black stuff dress. The stranger was struck with surprise as he saw her approach and mount the cart—surprise, not so much at the feminine delicacy of her appearance, as at the total absence of self-consciousness in

VOL. I. c

34 ADAM BEDE.

her demeanour. He had made up his mind to see her advance with a measured step, and a demure solemnity of countenance ; he had felt sure that her face would be mantled with the smile of conscious saintship, or else charged with denunciatory bitterness. He knew but two types of Methodist—the ecstatic and the bilious. But Dinah walked as simply as if she were going to market, and seemed as unconscious of her outward appearance as a little boy: there was no blush, no tremulousness, which said, " I know you think me a pretty woman, too young to preach;" no casting up or down of the eyelids, no compression of the lips, no attitude of the arms, that said, " But you must think of me as a saint." She held no book in her ungloved hands, but let them hang down lightly crossed before her, as she stood and turned her grey eyes on the people. There was no keenness in the eyes ; they seemed rather to be shedding love than making observations ; they had the liquid look which tells that the mind is full of what it has to give out, rather than impressed by external objects. She stood with her left hand towards the descending sun; and leafy boughs screened her from its rays ; but in this sober light the delicate colouring of her face seemed to

ADAM BEDE. 35

gather a calm vividness, like flowers at evening. It was a small oval face, of a uniform transparent whiteness, with an egg-like line of cheek and chin, a full but firm mouth, a delicate nostril, and a low perpendicular brow, surmounted by a rising arch of parting, between smooth locks of pale reddish hair. The hair was drawn straight back behind the ears, and covered, except for an inch or two above the brow, by a net quaker cap. The eyebrows, of the same colour as the hair, were perfectly horizontal and firmly pencilled; the eyelashes, though no darker, were long and abundant; nothing was left blurred or unfinished. It was one of those faces that make one think of white flowers with light touches of colour on their pure petals. The eyes had no peculiar beauty, beyond that of expression ; they looked so simple, so candid, so gravely loving, that no accusing scowl, no light sneer, could help melting away before their glance. Joshua Rann gave a long cough, as if he were clearing his throat in order to come

to a new understanding with himself; Chad Cranage lifted up his leather skull-cap and scratched his head; and Wiry Ben wondered how Seth had the pluck to think of courting her.

"A sweet woman," the stranger said to himself, "but surely nature never meant her for a preacher."

Perhaps he was one of those who think that nature has theatrical properties, and, with the considerate view of facilitating art and psychology, "makes up" her characters, so that there may be no mistake about them. But Dinah began to speak.

"Dear friends," she said, in a clear but not loud voice, "let us pray for a blessing."

She closed her eyes, and hanging her head down a little, continued in the same moderate tone, as if speaking to some one quite near her :—

"Saviour of sinners ! when a poor woman, laden with sins, went out to the well to draw water, she found Thee sitting at the well. She knew Thee not; she had not sought Thee ; her mind was dark ; her life was unholy. But Thou didst speak to her. Thou didst teach her. Thou didst show her that her life lay open before Thee, and yet Thou wast ready to give her that blessing which she had never sought. Jesus ! Thou art in the midst of us, and Thou knowest all men: if there is any here like that poor woman—if their minds are dark, their lives unholy—if they have come out not seeking Thee, not desiring to be taught; deal with them accord

ing to the free mercy which Thou didst show to her. Speak to them, Lord ; open their ears to my message ; bring their sins to their minds, and make them thirst for that salvation which Thou art ready to give.

"Lord ! Thou art with Thy people still: they see Thee in the night-watches, and their hearts burn within them as Thou talkest with them by the way. And Thou art near to those who have not known Thee : open their eyes that they may see Thee—see Thee weeping over

them, and saying, ' Ye will not come unto me that ye might have life'—see Thee hanging on the cross and saying, ' Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do'—see Thee as Thou wilt come again in Thy glory to judge them at the last. Amen."

Dinah opened her eyes again and paused, looking at the group of villagers, who were now gathered rather more closely on her right hand.

" Dear friends," she began, raising her voice a little, " you have all of you been to church, and I think you must have heard the clergyman read these words : ' The spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor.' Jesus Christ spoke these words—he

said he came to preach the Gospel to the poor: I don't know whether you ever thought about those words much ; but I will tell you when I remember first hearing them. It was on just such a sort of evening as this, when I was a little girl, and my aunt as brought me up, took me to hear a good man preach out of doors, just as we are here. I remember his face well: he was a verj^ old man, and had very long white hair ; his voice was very soft and beautiful, not like any voice I had ever heard before. I was a little girl, and scarcely knew anything, and this old man seemed to me such a different sort of a man from anybody I had ever seen before, that I thought he had perhaps come down from the sky to preach to us, and I said, ' Aunt, will he go back to the sky to-night, like the picture in the Bible ?'

" That man of God was Mr Wesley, who spent his life in doing what our blessed Lord did—preaching the Gospel to the poor—and he entered into his rest eight years ago. I came to know more about him years after, but I was a foolish thoughtless child then, and I remembered only one thing he told us in his sermon. He told us as * Gospel' meant ' good news.' The Gospel, you know, is what the Bible tells us about God.

" Think of that, now! Jesus Christ did really come down from heaven, as I, like a silly child, thought Mr Wesley did; and what he came

down for, was to tell good news about God to the poor. Why, you and me, dear friends, are poor. We have been brought up in poor cottages, and have been reared on oat-cake and lived coarse ; and we haven't been to school much, nor read books, and we don't know much about anything but what happens just round us. We are just the sort of people that want to hear good news. For when anybody's well off, they don't much mind about hearing news from distant parts; but if a poor man or woman's in trouble and has hard work to make out a living, he likes to have a letter to tell him he's got a friend as will help him. To be sure we can't help knowing something about God, even if AveVe never heard the Gospel, the good news that our Saviour brought us. For we know everything comes from God : don't you say almost every day, ' This and that will happen, please God ;' and ' We shall begin to cut the grass soon, please God to send us a little more sunshine.' We know very well we are altogether in the hands of God: we didn't bring ourselves into the world, we can't keep oui'selves alive while we're

sleeping ; the daylight, and the wind, and the com, and the cows to give us milk—everything we have comes from God. And he gave us our souls, and I^ut love between parents and children, and husband and wife. But is that as much as we want to know about God ? We see he is great and mighty, and can do what he will; we are lost, as if we was struggling in great waters, when we try to think of him. " But perhaps doubts come into yom^ mind like this: Can God take much notice of us poor people ? Perhaps he only made the world for the great and the wise and the rich. It doesn't cost him much to give us our little handful of victual and bit of clothing ; but how do we know he cares for us any more than we care for the worms and things in the garden, so as we rear our carrots and onions ? Will God take care of us when we die ? and has he any comfort for us when we are lame and sick and helpless ? Perhaps, too, he is angiy with us; else why does the blight come, and the bad harvests, and the fever, and all sorts of pain and trouble ? For our life is full of trouble, and if God sends us good, he seems to send bad too. How is it ? how is it ?

" Ah ! dear friends, we are in sad want of good news about God ;
and what does other good news

signify if we haven't that? For everything else comes to an end, and
when we die we leave it all. But God lasts when everything else is
gone. What shall we do if he is not our friend ? "

Then Dinah told how the good news had been brought, and how the
mind of God towards the poor had been made manifest in the life of
Jesus, dwelling on its lowliness and its acts of mercy.

" So you see, dear friends," she went on, " Jesus spent his time
almost all in doing good to poor people ; he preached out of doors to
them, and he made friends of poor workmen, and taught them and
took pains with them. Not but what he did good to the rich too, for he
was full of love to all men, only he saw as the poor were more in
want of his help. So he cured the lame and the sick and the blind,
and he worked miracles, to feed the hungry, because, he said, he
was sorry for them; and he was very kind to the little children, and
comforted those who had lost their friends ; and he spoke very
tenderly to poor sinners that were sorry for their sins.

" Ah ! wouldn't you love such a man if you saw him—if he was here
in this village ? " "What a kind heart he must have ! What a friend he
would be

to go to in trouble ! How pleasant it must be to be taught by him !

" Well dear friends, who was this man ? Was he only a good man—a
very good man, and no more— like our dear Mr Wesley, who has
been taken from us ? He was the Son of God—' in the image of
the Father/ the Bible says; that means, just like God, who is the
beginning and end of all things—the God we want to know about. So
then, all the love that Jesus showed to the poor is the same love that
God has for us. We can understand what Jesus felt, because he
came in a body like ours, and spoke words such as we speak to
each other. We were afraid to think what God was before—the God
who made the world and the sky and the thunder and lightning; . We

could never see him ; we could only see the things he had made; and some of these things was very terrible, so as we might well tremble when we thought of him. But our blessed Saviour has showed us what God is in a way us poor ignorant people can understand ; he has showed us what God's heart is, what are his feelings towards us.

" But let us see a little more about what Jesus came on earth for. Another time he said, ' I came

to seek and to save that which was lost;' and another time, ' I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance/

" The lost! Sinners / Ah, dear friends, does that mean you and me ? "

Hitherto the traveller had been chained to the spot against his will by the charm of Dinah's mellow treble tones, which had a variety of modulation like that of a fine instrument touched with the unconscious skill of musical instinct. The simple things she said seemed like novelties, as a melody strikes us with a new feeling when we hear it sung by the pure voice of a boyish chorister ; the quiet depth of conviction with which she spoke seemed in itself an evidence for the truth of her message. He saw that she had thoroughly arrested her hearers. The villagers had pressed nearer to her, and there was no longer anything but grave attention on all faces. She spoke slowly, though quite fluently, often pausing after a question, or before any transition of ideas. There was no change of attitude, no gesture ; the effect of her speech was produced entirely by the inflections of her voice, and when she came to the question, " Will God take care-of us when we die ?" she uttered it in such a tone of plaintive appeal that

the tears came into some of the hardest eyes. The stranger had ceased to doubt, as he had done at the first glance, that she could fix the attention of her rougher hearers, but still he wondered whether she could have that power of rousing their more violent emotions, which must surely be a necessary seal of her vocation as a

Methodist preacher, until she came to the words, " Lost!—Sinners ! " when there was a great change in her voice and manner. She had made a long pause before the exclamation, and the pause seemed to be filled by agitating thoughts that showed themselves in her features. Her pale face became paler ; the circles under her eyes deepened, as they do when tears half gather without falling; and the mild loving eyes took an expression of appalled pity, as if she had suddenly discerned a destroying angel hovering over the heads of the people. Her voice became deep and muffled, but there was still no gesture. Nothing could be less like the ordinary type of the Eanter than Dinah. She was not preaching as she heard others preach, but speaking directly from her own emotions, and under the inspiration of her own simple faith.

But now she had entered into a new current of

feeling. Her manner became less calm, her utterance more rapid and agitated, as she tried to bring home to the people their guilt, their wilful darkness, their state of disobedience to God—as she dwelt on the hatefulness of sin, the Divine holiness, and the sufferings of the Saviour by which a way had been opened for their salvation. At last it seemed as if, in her yearning desire to reclaim the lost sheep, she could not be satisfied by addressing her hearers as a body. She appealed first to one and then to another, beseeching them with tears to turn to God while there was yet time ; painting to them the desolation of their souls, lost in sin, feeding on the husks of this miserable world, far away from God their Father; and then the love of the Saviour, who was waiting and watching for their return.

There was many a responsive sigh and groan from her fellow Methodists, but the village mind does not easily take fire, and a little smouldering vague anxiety, that might easily die out again, was the utmost effect Dinah's preaching had wrought in them at present. Yet no one had retired, except the children and " old Feyther Taft," who being too deaf to catch many words, had some time ago gone

40 ADAM BEDE.

back to his ingle-nook Wiry Ben was feeling very uncomfortable, and almost wishing he had not come to hear Dinah ; he thought what she said would haunt him somehow. Yet he couldn't help liking to look at her and listen to her, though he dreaded every moment that she would fix her eyes on him, and address him in particular. She had already addressed Sandy Jim, who was now holding the baby to relieve his wife, and the big soft-hearted man had rubbed away some tears with his fist, with a confused intention of being a better fellow, going less to the Holly Bush down by the Stone Pits, and cleaning himself more regularly of a Sunday.

In front of Sandy Jim stood Chad's Bess, who had shown an unwonted quietude and fixity of attention ever since Dinah had begun to speak. Not that the matter of the discourse had arrested her at once, for she was lost in a puzzling speculation as to what pleasure and satisfaction there could be in Hfe to a young woman who wore a cap like Dinah's. Giving up this inquiry in despair, she took to studying Dinah's nose, eyes, mouth, and hair, and wondering whether it was better to have such a sort of pale face as that, or fat red cheeks and round black eyes like her own. But gradually the

ADAM BEDE. 47

influence of the general gravity told upon her, and she became conscious of what Dinah was saying. The gentle tones, the loving persuasion, did not touch her, but when the more severe appeals came she began to be frightened. Poor Bessy had always been considered a naughty girl; she was conscious of it; if it was necessary to be very good, it was clear she must be in a bad way. She couldn't find her places at church as Sally Eann could, she had often been tittering when she " curcheyed" to Mr Irwine, and these religious deficiencies were accompanied by a corresponding slackness in the minor morals, for Bessy belonged unquestionably to that unsoaped, lazy class of feminine characters with whom you may venture to eat " an egg, an apple, or a nut/' All this she was generally conscious of, and hitherto had not been greatly ashamed of it. But now she began to feel very much as if the constable had come to

take her up and carry her before the justice for some undefined offence. She had a terrified sense that God, whom she had always thought of as very far off", was very near to her, and that Jesus was close by looking at her, though she could not see him. For Dinah had that belief in visible manifestations of Jesus, which is common among

48 ADAM BEDE.

the Methodists, and she communicated it irresistibly to her hearers; she made them feel that he was among them bodily, and might at any moment show himself to them in some way that would strike anguish and penitence into their hearts.

" See!" she exclaimed, turning to the left, with her eyes fixed on a point above the heads of the people—" see where our blessed Lord stands and weeps, and stretches out his arms towards you. Hear what he says : ' How often would I have gathered you as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not!' . . . and ye would not!" she repeated, in a tone of pleading reproach, turning her eyes on the people again. " See the print of the nails on his dear hands and feet. It is your sins that made them ! Ah, how pale and worn he looks ! He has gone through all that great agony in the garden, when his soul was exceeding sorrowful even unto death, and the great drops of sweat fell like blood to the ground. They spat upon him and buffeted him, they scourged him, they mocked him, they laid the heavy cross on his bruised shoulders. Then they nailed him up. Ah! what pain! His lips are parched with thirst, and they mock him still in this great agony; yet with those parched lips he prays

ADAM BEDE. 49

for them, ' Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do/ Then a horror of great darkness fell upon him, and he felt what sinners feel when they are forever shut out from God. That was the last drop in the cup of bitterness. ' My God, my God !' he cries, ' why hast Thou forsaken me ?'

" All this he bore for you ! For you—and you never think of him ; for you—and you turn your backs on him; you don't care what he has gone through for you. Yet he is not weary of toiling for you : he has risen from the dead, he is praying for you at the right hand of God—' Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do.' And he is upon this earth too ; he is among us ; he is there close to you now; I see his wounded body and his look of love."

Here Dinah turned to Bessy Cranage, whose bonny youth and evident vanity had touched her with pity.

" Poor child ! poor child ! He is beseeching you, and you don't listen to him. You think of earrings and fine gowns and caps, and you never think of the Saviour who died to save your precious soul. Your cheeks will be shrivelled one day, your hair

will be grey, your poor body will be thin and VOL. I. D

50 ADAM BEDE.

tottering ! Then you will begin to feel that your soul is not saved ; then you will have to stand before God dressed in your sins, in your evil tempers and vain thoughts. And Jesus, who stands ready to help you now, won't help you then: because you won't have him to be your saviour, he will be your judge. Now he looks at you with love and mercy, and says, ' Come to me that you may have life;' then he will turn away from you, and say, ' Depart from me into everlasting fire !'"

Poor Bessy's wide-open black eyes began to fill with tears, her great red cheeks and lips became quite pale, and her face was distorted like a little child's before a burst of crying.

" Ah ! poor blind child !" Dinah went on, " think if it should happen to you as it once happened to a servant of God in the days of her vanity. She thought of her lace caps, and saved all her money to buy 'em ; she thought nothing about how she might get a clean heart and a right spirit, she only wanted to have better lace than other gMs.

And one day when she put her new cap on and looked in the glass, she saw a bleeding Face crowned with thorns. That faoe is looking at you now,"—here Dinah pointed to a spot close in front of Bessy.— "Ah, tear off those follies! cast them away from you,

ADAM BEDE. '51

as if they were stinging adders. They are stinging you—they are poisoning your soul—they are dragging you down iinto a dark bottomless pit, where you will sink for ever, and for ever, and for ever, further away from light and God."

Bessy could bear it no longer: a great terror was upon her, and wrenching her earrings from her ears, she threw them down before her, sobbing aloud. Her father Chad, frightened lest he should be "laid hold on" too, this impression on the rebellious Bess striking him as nothing less than a miracle, walked hastUy away, and began to work at his anvil by way of reassuring himself " Folks mun ha' hoss-shoes, praichin' or no praichin': the divil canna lay hould o' me for that," he muttered to himself.

But now Dinah began to tell of the joys that were in store for the penitent, and to describe in her simple way the divine peace and love with which the soul of the believer is filled—how the sense of God's love turns poverty into riches, and satisfies the soul, so that no uneasy desire vexes it, no fear alarms it: how, at last, the very temptation to sin is extinguished, and heaven is begun upon earth, because no cloud passes between the soul and God, who is its eternal sun.

52 ADAM BEDE.

" Dear friends," she said at last, " brothers and sisters, whom I love as those for whom my Lord has died, believe me I know what this great blessedness is ; and because I know it, I want you to have it too. I am poor, like you : I have to get my living with my hands; but no lord nor lady can be so happy as me, if they haven't got the love of God in their souls. Think what it is — not to hate anything but sin;

to be full of love to every creature; to be frightened at nothing; to be sure that all things will turn to good; not to mind pain, because it is our Father's will; to know that nothing—no, not if the earth was to be burnt up, or the waters come and drown us—nothing could part us from God who loves us, and who fills our souls with peace and joy, because we are sure that whatever he wills is holy, just, and good.

" Dear friends, come and take this blessedness ; it is offered to you; it is the good news that Jesus came to preach to the poor. It is not like the riches of this world, so that the more one gets the less the rest can have. God is without end; his love is without end—

* Its streams the whole creation reach, So plenteous is the store ;
Enough for all, enough for each. Enough for evermore."

ADAM EDEN. 53

Dinah had been speaking at least an hour, and the reddening light of the parting day seemed to give a solemn emphasis to her closing words. The stranger, who had been interested in the course of her sermon, as if it had been the development of a drama—for there is this sort of fascination in a sincere unpremeditated eloquence, which opens to one the inward drama of the speaker's emotions—now turned his horse aside, and pursued his way, while Dinah said, " Let us sing a little, dear friends;" and as he was still winding down the slope, the voices of the Methodists reached him, rising and falling in that strange blending of exultation and sadness which belongs to the cadence of a hymn.

CHAPTER III.

AFTER THE PREACHING.

In less than an hour from that time Seth Bede was walking by Dinah's side along the hedgerow-path that skirted the pastures and green cornfields which lay between the village and the Hall Farm. Dinah had taken off her little quaker bonnet again, and was holding

it in her hands that she might have a freer enjoyment of the cool evening twilight, and Seth could see the expression of her face quite clearly as he walked by her side, timidly revolving something he wanted to say to her. It was an expression of unconscious placid gravity—of absorption in thoughts that had no connection with the present moment or with her own personality: an expression that is most of all discouraging to a lover. Her very walk was discouraging: it had that quiet elasticity that asks for no support. Seth felt this dimly; he said to himself, " She's too good and holy for any man, let

ADAM BEDE. 55

alone me," and the words he had been summoning rushed back again before they had reached his lips. But another thought gave him courage: " There's no man could love her better, and leave her freer to follow the Lord's work/' They had been silent for many minutes now, since they had done talking about Bessy Cranage ; Dinah seemed almost to have forgotten Seth's presence, and her pace was becoming so much quicker, that the sense of their being only a few minutes' walk from the yard-gates of the Hall Farm at last gave Seth courage to speak.

" You've quite made up your mind to go back to Snowfield o' Saturday, Dinah ?"

" Yes," said Dinah quietly. " I'm called there. It was borne in upon my mind while I was meditating on Sunday night, as sister Allen, who's in a decline, is in need of me. I saw her as plain as we see that bit of thin white cloud, lifting up her poor thin hand and beckoning to me. And this morning when I opened the Bible for direction, the first words my eyes fell on were, * And after we had seen the vision, immediately we endeavoured to go into Macedonia.' If it wasn't for that clear showing of the Lord's will I should be loth to go, for my

56 ADAM bj:de.

heart yearns over my aunt and her little ones, and that poor wandering lamb, Hetty Sorrel. I've been much drawn out in prayer for

her of late, and I look on it as a token that there may be mercy in store for her."

" God grant it," said Seth. " For I doubt Adam's heart is so set on her, he'll never turn to anybody else ; and yet it 'ud go to my heart if he was to maiTy her, for I canna think as she'd make him happy. It's a deep mystery—the way the heart of man turns to one woman out of all the rest he's seen i' the world, and makes it easier for him to work seven year for hei% like Jacob did for Rachel, sooner than have any other woman for th' asking. I often think of them words, ' And Jacob served seven years for Eachel; and they seemed to him but a few days for the love he had to her.' I know those words 'ud come true with me, Dinah, if so be you'd give me hope as I might win you after seven years was over. I know you think a husband 'ud be taking up too much o' your thoughts, because St Paul says, ' She that's married careth for the things of the world, how she msij please her husband;' and may happen you'll think me over-bold to speak to you about it again, after what you told me o' your

ADAM BEDE. 57

mind last Saturday. But I've been thinking it over again by night and by day, and I've prayed not to be blinded by my own desires to think what's only good for me must be good for you too. And it seems to me there's more texts for your marrying than ever you can find against it. For St Paul says as plain as can be, in another place, ' I will that the younger women marry, bear children, guide the house, give none occasion to the adversary to speak reproachfully;' and then, 'two are better than one ;' and that holds good with marriage as well as with other things. For we should be o' one heart and o' one mind, Dinah. We both serve the same Master, and are stri^dng after the same gifts ; and I'd never be the husband to make a claim on you as could interfere with your doing the work God has fitted you for. I'd make a shift, and fend indoor and out, to give you more hberty—more than you can have now, for you've got to get your own living now, and I'm strong enough to work for us both."

When Seth had once begun to urge his suit, he went on earnestly, and almost hurriedly, lest Dinah should speak some decisive word before he had poured forth all the arguments he had prepared.

58 ADAM bedp:.

His cheeks became flushed as he went on, his mild grey eyes filled with tears, and his voice trembled as he spoke the last sentence. They had reached one of those very narrow passes between two tall stones, which intervened the office of a stile in Loamshire, and Dinah paused as she turned towards Seth and said, in her tender but calm treble notes—

" Seth Bede, I thank you for your love towards me, and if I could think any man as more than a Christian brother, I think it would be you. But my heart is not free to marry. That is good for other women, and it is a great and a blessed thing to be a wife and mother ; but ' as God has distributed to every man, as the Lord hath called every man, so let him walk.' God has called me to minister to others, not to have any joys or sorrows of my own, but to rejoice with them that do rejoice, and to weep with those that weep. He has called me to speak his word, and he has greatly owned my work. It could only be on a very clear showing that I could leave the brethren and sisters at Snowfield, who are favoured with very little of this world's good ; where the trees are few so that a child might count them, and there's very hard living for the

poor in the winter. It has been given me to help, to comfort, and strengthen the little flock there, and to call in many wanderers; and my soul is filled with these things from my rising up till my lying down. My life is too short, and God's work is too great for me to think of making a home for myself in this world. I've not turned a deaf ear to your words, Seth, for when I saw as your love was given to me, I thought it might be a leading of Providence for me to change my way of life, and that we should be fellow-helpers ; and I spread the matter before the Lord. But whenever I tried to fix my mind on marriage, and our living together, other thoughts always came in—the times when I've prayed by the sick and dying, and the happy

hours I've had preaching, when my heart was filled with love, and the Word was given to me abundantly. And when I've opened the Bible for direction, I've always lighted on some clear word to tell me where my work lay. I believe what you say, Seth, that you would try to be a help and not a hindrance to my work; but I see that our marriage is not God's will—he draws my heart another way. I desire to live and die without husband or children. I seem to have no room in my soul for wants and

60 ADAM BEDE.

fears of my own, it has pleased God to fill my heart so full with the wants and sufferings of his poor people/

Seth was unable to reply, and they walked on in silence. At last, as they were nearly at the yardgate, he said—

" Well, Dinah, I must seek for strength to bear it, and to endure as seeing Him who is invisible. But I feel now how weak my faith is. It seems as if, when you are gone, I could never joy in anything any more. I think it's something passing the love of women as I feel for you, for I could be content without your marrying me if I could go and live at Snowfield, and be near you. I trusted as the strong love God had given me towards you was a leading for us both ; but it seems it was only meant for my trial. Perhaps I feel more for you than I ought to feel for any creature, for I often can't help saying of you what the hymn says,—

' In darkest shades if she appear, My dawning is begun ; She is my soul's bright morning-star, And she my rising sun.'

That may be wrong, and I am to be taught better. But you wouldn't be displeased with me if things

turned out so as I could leave this country and go to Kve at Snowfield ? "

" No, Seth ; but I counsel you to wait patiently, and not lightly to leave your own country and kindred. Do nothing without the Lord's clear bidding. It's a bleak and barren country there, not like this land of Goshen you've been used to. We mustn't be in a hurry to fix and choose our own lot; we must wait to be guided."

" But you'd let me write you a letter, Dinah, if there was anything I wanted to tell you."

" Yes, sure ; let me know if you're in any trouble. You'll be continually in my prayers."

They had now reached the yard-gate, and Seth said, " I won't go in, Dinah, so farewell." He paused and hesitated after she had given him her hand, and then said, " There's no knowing but what you may see things different after a while. There may be a new leading."

" Let us leave that, Seth. It's good to live only a moment at a time, as I've read in one of Mr Wesley's books. It isn't for you and me to lay plans; we've nothing to do but to obey and to trust. Farewell."

Dinah pressed his hand with rather a sad look in

lier loving eyes, and then passed through the gate, while Seth turned away to walk lingeringly home. But instead of taking the direct road, he chose to turn back along the fields through w^hich he and Dinah had already passed ; and I think his blue linen handkerchief was very wet with tears long before he had made up his mind that it was time for him to set his face steadily homewards. He was but three-and-twenty, and had only just learned ♦what it is to love—to love wdth that adoration which a young man gives to a woman whom he feels to be greater and better than himself. Love of this sort is hardly distinguishable from religious feeling. What deep and worthy love is so ? whether of woman or child, or art or music. Our caresses, our tender words, our still rapture under the influence of autumn sunsets, or pillared vistas, or calm majestic statues, or Beethoven symjDhonies, all bring with them the consciousness that they are mere waves and ripples in an unfathomable ocean of love and

beauty: our emotion in its keenest moment passes from expression into silence ; our love at its highest flood rushes beyond its object, and loses itself in the sense of divine mystery. And this blessed gift of venerating love has been given to too many humble

ADAM BEDE. 63

craftsmen since the world began, for us to feel any surprise that it should have existed in the soul of a Methodist carpenter half a century ago, while there was yet a lingering after-glow from the time when Wesley and his fellow-labourer fed on the hips and haws of the Cornwall hedges, after exhausting limbs and lungs in carrying a divine message to the poor.

That after-glow has long faded away ; and the picture we are apt to make of Methodism in our imagination is not an amphitheatre of green hills, or the deep shade of broad-leaved sycamores, where a crowd of rough men and weary-hearted women drank in a faith which was a rudimentary culture, which linked their thoughts with the past, lifted their imagination above the sordid details of their own narrow lives, and suffused their souls with the sense of a pitying, loving, infinite Presence, sweet as summer to the houseless needy. It is too possible that to some of my readers Methodism may mean nothing more than low-pitched gables up dingy streets, sleek grocers, sponging preachers and hypocritical jargon—elements which are regarded as an exhaustive analysis of Methodism in many fashionable quarters.

64 ADAM BEDE.

That would be a pity ; for I cannot pretend that Seth and Dinah were anything else than Methodists—not indeed of that modern type which reads quarterly reviews and attends in chapels with pillared porticoes; but of a very old-fashioned kind. They believed in present miracles, in instantaneous conversions, in revelations by dreams and visions ; they drew lots, and sought for Divine guidance by opening the Bible at hazard ; having a literal way of interpreting the Scriptures, which is not at all sanctioned by approved commentators

; and it is impossible for me to represent their diction as correct, or their instruction as liberal. Still—if I have read religious history aright—faith, hope, and charity have not always been found in a direct ratio with a sensibility to the three concords; and it is possible, thank Heaven! to have very erroneous theories and very sublime feelings. The raw bacon which clumsy Molly spares from her own scanty store, that she may carry it to her neighbour's child to "stop the fits," may be a piteously inefficacious remedy; but the generous stirring of neighbourly kindness that prompted the deed, has a beneficent radiation that is not lost.

Considering these things, we can hardly think

ADAM BEDE. 65

Dinah and Seth beneath our sympathy, accustomed as we may be to weep over the loftier sorrows of heroines in satin boots and crinoline, and of heroes riding fiery horses, themselves ridden by still more fiery passions.

Poor Seth! he was never on horseback in his life except once, when he was a little lad, and Mr Jonathan Burge took him up behind, telling him to "hold on tight;" and instead of bursting out into wild accusing apostrophes to God and destiny, he is resolving, as he now walks homeward under the solemn starlight, to repress his sadness, to be less bent on having his own will, and to live more for others, as Dinah does.

VOL. I. K

CHAPTER Iy.

HOME AND ITS SORROWS.

A GREEN valley with a brook running through it, full almost to overflowing with the late rains; overhung by low stooping willows. Across this brook a plank is thrown, and over this plank Adam Bede is passing with his undoubting step, followed close by Gyp with the

basket; evidently making his way to the thatched house, with a stack of timber by the side of it, about twenty yards up the opposite slope.

The door of the house is open, and an elderly woman is looking out; but she is not placidly contemplating the evening sunshine; she has been watching with dim eyes the gradually enlarging speck which for the last few minutes she has been quite sure is her darling son Adam. Lisbeth Bede loves her son with the love of a woman to whom her first-born has come late in life. She is an anxious,

spare, yet vigorous old woman, clean as a snowdrop. Her grey liaii* is turned neatly back under a pure linen cap with a black band round it; her broad chest is covered with a buff neckerchief, and below this you see a sort of short bed-gown made of blue-checked linen, tied round the waist and descending to the hips, from whence there is a considerable length of hnsey-wolsey petticoat. For Lisbeth is tall, and in other points too there is a strong likeness between her and her son Adam. Her dark eyes are somewhat dim now—perhaps from too much crying—but her broadly-marked eyebrows are still black, her teeth are sound, and as she stands knitting rapidly and unconsciously with her work-hardened hands, she has as firmly-upright an attitude as when she is carrying a pail of water on her head from the spring. There is the same type of frame and the same keen activity of temperament in mother and son, but it was not from her that Adam got his well-filled brow and his expression of large-hearted intelligence.

Family likeness has often a deep sadness in it. Nature, that great tragic dramatist, knits us together by bone and muscle, and divides us by the subtler web of our brains ; blends yearning and repulsion ;

and ties us by our heartstrings to the beings that jar us at every movement. We hear a voice with the very cadence of our own uttering the thoughts we despise ; we see eyes—ah ! so like our mother's —averted from us in cold alienation; and our last darling child startles us with the air and gestures of the sister we parted from in bitterness long years ago. The father to whom we owe our best heritage—the mechanical instinct, the keen sensibility to harmony,

the unconscious skill of the modelhng hand—galls us, and puts us to shame by his daily errors ; the long-lost mother, whose face we begin to see in the glass as our own wrinkles come, once fretted our young souls with her anxious humours and irrational persistence.

It is such a fond anxious mother's voice that you hear as Lisbeth says,

"Well, my lad, it's gone seven by th' clock. Thee 't allays stay till the last child's born. Thee wants thy supper, I'll warrand. Where's Seth? gone arter some o's chapellin', I reckon ?"

" Ay, ay, Seth's at no harm, mother, thee mayst be sure. But where's father ? " said Adam quickly, as he entered the house and glanced into the room on the left hand, which was used as a workshop.

" Hasn't he done the coffin for Tholer ? There's the stuff standing just as I left it this morning/'

"Done the coffin?" said Lisbeth, following him, and knitting uninterruptedly, though she looked at her son very anxiously. " Eh, my lad, he went aff to Treddles'on this forenoon, an's niver come back. I doubt he's got to th' ' Waggin Overthrow' again."

A deep flush of anger passed rapidly over Adam's face. He said nothing, but threw off his jacket, and began to roll up his shirt-sleeves again.

" What art goin' to do, Adam ?" said the mother, with a tone and look of alarm. "Thee wouldstna go to work again, vd'out ha'in' thy bit o' supper ?"

Adam, too angry to speak, walked into the workshop. But his mother threw down her knitting, and, hurrying after him, took hold of his arm, and said in a tone of plaintive remonstrance—

" Nay, my lad, my lad, thee munna go wi'out thy supper; there's the taters wi' the gravy in 'em, just as thee lik'st 'em. I sav'd 'em o'

purpose for thee. Come an' ha' thy supper, come."

" Let be ! " said Adam impetuously, shaking her off, and seizing one of the planks that stood against the wall. " It's fine tallng about having supper

70 ADAM BEDE.

when here's a coffin promised to be ready at Brox'on by seven o'clock to-morrow morning, and ought to ha' been there now, and not a nail struck yet. My throat's too full to swallow victuals."

" ^Yhy, thee canstna get the coffin ready," said Lisbeth. " Thee't work thyself to death. It 'ud take thee all night to do't"

" What signifies how long it takes me ? Isn't the coffin promised ? Can they bury the man without a coffin? I'd work my right hand off sooner than deceive people with lies i' that way. It makes me mad to think on't. I shall overrun these doings before long. I've stood enough of 'em."

Poor Lisbeth did not hear this threat for the first time, and if she had been wise she would have gone away quietly, and said nothing for the next hour. But one of the lessons a woman most rarely learns, is never to talk to an angry or a drunken man. Lisbeth sat down on the chopping-bench and began to cry, and by the time she had cried enough to make her voice very piteous, she burst out into words.

" Nay, my lad, my lad, thee wouldstna go away an' break thy mother's heart, an' leave thy feyther to ruin. Thee wouldstna ha' 'em carry me to th' churchyard, an' thee not to follow me. I shanna rest i' my

ADAM BEDE. 71

grave if I donna see thee at th' last, an' how 's they to let thee know as I'm a-dyin', if thee 't gone a worMn' i' distant parts, an' Seth belike gone arter thee, and thy feyther not able t' hold a pen for 's hand

shakin', besides not knowin' where thee art. Thee mun forgie thy feyther—thee munna be so bitter again' him. He war a good feyther to thee afore he took to th' drink He's a cliver workman, an' taught thee thy trade, remember, an's niver gen me a blow nor so much as an ill word—no, not even in's drink. Thee wouldstna ha 'm go to th' workhus—thy own feyther—an' him as was a finegrowed man an' handy at iverythin' amost as thee art thysen, five-an'-twenty 'ear ago, when thee wast a babby at the breast."

Lisbeth's voice became louder, and choked with sobs : a sort of wail, the most irritating of all sounds where real sorrows are to be borne, and real work to be done. Adam broke in impatiently.

" Now, mother, don't cry, and talk so. Haven't I got enough to vex me without that ? What's th' use o' telling me things as I only think too much on every day ? If I didna think on 'em, why should I do as I do, for the sake o' keeping things together here ? But I hate to be talking where it's no use :

I like to keep my breath for doing instead o' talk
ing.

" I know thee dost things as nobody else 'ud do, my lad. But thee 't allays so hard upo' thy feyther, Adam. Thee think'st nothing too much to do for Seth : thee snapp'st me up if iver I find faut wi' th' lad. But thee 't so angered wi' thy feyther, more nor wi' anybody else."

" That's better than speaking soft, and letting things go the wrong way, I reckon, isn't it ? If I wasn't sharp with him, he'd sell every bit o' stuff i' th' yard, and spend it on drink. I know there's a duty to be done by my father, but it isn't my duty to encourage him in running headlong to ruin. And what has Seth got to do with it ? The lad does no harm, as I know of But leave me alone, mother, and let me get on with the work."

Lisbeth dared not say any more ; but she got up and called Gyp, thinking to console herself somewhat for Adam's refusal of the

supper she had spread out in the loving expectation of looking at him while he ate it, by feeding Adam's dog with extra liberality. But Gyp was watching his master with wrinkled brow and ears erect, puzzled at this unusual course of things ; and though he glanced

at Lisbeth when she called him, and moved his fore-paws uneasily, well knowing that she was inviting him to supper, he was in a divided state of mind, and remained seated on his haunches, again fixing his eyes anxiously on his master. Adam noticed Gyp's mental conflict, and though his anger had made him less tender than usual to his mother, it did not prevent him from caring as much as usual for his dog. We are apt to be kinder to the brutes that love us than to the women that love us. Is it because the brutes are dumb ?

" Go, Gyp; go, lad !" Adam said, in a tone of encouraging command; and Gyp, apparently satisfied that duty and pleasure were one, followed Lisbeth into the house-place.

But no sooner had he licked up his supper than he went back to his master, while Lisbeth sat down alone, to cry over her knitting. "Women who are never bitter and resentful are often the most querulous ; and if Solomon was as wise as he is reputed to be, I feel sure that when he compared a contentious woman to a continual dropping on a very rainy day, he had not a vixen in his eye—a fury with long nails, acrid and selfish. Depend upon it, he meant a good creature, who had no joy but in

the happiness of the loved ones whom she contributed to make uncomfortable, putting by all the tid-bits for them, and spending nothing on herself Such a woman as Lisbeth, for example—at once patient and complaining, self-renouncmg and exacting, brooding the livelong day over what happened yesterday, and what is likely to happen to-morrow, and cying very readily both at the good and the evil. But a certain awe mingled itself with her idolatrous love of Adam, and when he said, " leave me alone," she was always silenced.

So the hours passed, to the loud ticking of the old day-clock and the sound of Adam's tools. At last he called for a light and a draught of water (beer was a thing only to be drunk on holidays), and Lisbeth ventured to say as she took it in, " Thy supper stans ready for thee, when thee lik'st."

" Donna thee sit up, mother," said Adam, in a gentle tone. He had worked off his anger now, and whenever he wished to be especially kind to his mother, he fell into his strongest native accent and dialect, with which at other times his speech was less deeply tinged. " I'll see to father when he comes home ; maybe he wanna come at all to-night. I shall be easier if thee 't i' bed."

'•Nay, 111 bide till Seth comes. He wanna be long now, I reckon."

It was then past nine by the clock, which was always in advance of the day, and before it had struck ten the latch was lifted, and Seth entered. He had heard the sound of the tools as he was approaching.

" Why, mother," he said, " how is it as father's working so late ?"

"It's none o' thy father as is a-workin'—thee might know that well anoof if thy head warn a full o' chapellin'—it's thy brother as does iverything, for there's niver nobody else i' th' way to do nothin'."

Lisbeth was going on, for she was not at all afraid of Seth, and usually poured into his ears all the querulousness which was repressed by her awe of Adam. Seth had never in his life spoken a harsh word to his mother, and timid people always wreak their peevishness on the gentle. But Seth, \Nith an anxious look, had passed into the workshop, and said,—

" Addy, how's this ? What! father's forgot the coffin?"

" Ay, lad, th' old tale ; but I shall get it done," said Adam, looking up, and casting one of his bright,

keen glances at his brother. "Why, what's the matter with thee ?
Thee 't in trouble."

Seth's eyes were red, and there was a look of deep depression on his mild face.

"Yes, Addy, but it's what must be borne, and can't be helped. Why, thee'st never been to the school, then ?"

" School ? no ; that screw can wait," said Adam, hammering away again.

" Let me take my turn now, and do thee go to bed," said Seth.

" No, lad, I'd rather go on, now I'm in harness. Thee't help me to carry it to Brox'on when it's done. I'll caU thee up at sunrise. Go and eat thy supper, and shut the door, so as I mayn't hear mother's talk."

Seth knew that Adam always meant what he said, and was not to be persuaded into meaning anything else. So he turned, with rather a heavy heart, into the house-place.

" Adam's niver touched a bit o' victual sin' home he's come," said Lisbeth. " I reckon thee'st hed thy supper at some o' thy Methody folks."

" Nay, mother," said Seth, " I've had no supper yet."

" Come, then," said Lisbeth, " but donna thee ate the taters, for Adam uU happen ate 'em if I leave 'em stannin'. He loves a bit o' taters an' grav}^ But he's been so sore an' angered, he wouldn't ate 'em, for all I'd putten 'em by o' purpose for him. An' he's been a threatenin' to go away again," she went on, whimpering, " an' I'm fast sure he'U go some dawnin' afore I'm up, an' niver let me know aforehand, an' he'll niver come back again when once he's gone. An' I'd better niver ha' had a son, as is like no other body's son for the deftness an' th' handiness, an' so looked on by th' grit folks, an' tall

an' upright like a poplar tree, an' me to be parted from him, an' niver see'm no more."

" Come, mother, donna grieve thyself in vain," said Seth, in a soothing voice. " Thee 'st not half so good reason to think as Adam 'nil go away as to think he'U stay with thee. He may say such a thing when he's in wrath—and he's got excuse for being wrathful sometimes—but his heart 'ud never let him go. Think how he's stood by us aU when it's been none so easy—paying his savings to free me from going for a soldier, an' turnin' his earnins into Avood for father, when he's got plenty o'

78 ADAM BEDE.

uses for his money, and many a young man like him 'ud ha' been married and settled before now. He'll never turn round and knock down his own work, and forsake them as it's been the labour of his life to stand by."

"Donna talk to me about"s marr'inV said Lisbeth, crying afresh. " He's set's heart on that Hetty Sorrel, as 'uU niver save a penny, an' 'ull toss up her head at's old mother. An' to think as he might ha' Mary Burge, an' be took partners, an' be a big man wi' workmen under him, like Mester Burge —Dolly's told me so o'er an' o'er again—if it warna as he's set's heart on that bit of a wench, as is o' no more use nor the gillyflower on the waU. An' he so wise at bookin' an' figm-in', an' not to know no better nor that! "

" But, mother, thee know'st we canna love just where other folks 'ud have us. There's nobody but God can control the heart of man. I could ha' wished myself as Adam could ha' made another choice, but I wouldn't reproach him for what he can't help. And I'm not sure but what he tries to o'ercome it. But it's a matter as he doesn't like to be spoke to about, and I can only pray to the Lord to bless and direct him."

ADAM BEDE. 79

" Ay, thee't allays ready enough at prayin', but I donna see as thee gets much wi' thy prayin'. Thee wotna get double earnins o' this side Yule. Tli' Methodies '11 niver make thee half the man thy brother is, for all they're a-makin' a preacher on thee/'

"It's partly truth thee speak'st there, mother/" said Seth mildly; " Adam's far before me, an's done more for me than I can ever do for him. God distributes talents to every man according as He sees good. But thee mustna undervally prayer. Prayer mayna bring money, but it brings us what no money can buy—a power to keep from sin, and be content with God's will, whatever he may please to send. If thee wouldst pray to God to help thee, and trust in His goodness, thee wouldstna be so uneasy about things."

"Unaisy? I'm i' th' right on't to be unaisy. It's weU seen on thee what it is niver to be unaisy. Thee't gi' away aU thy earnins, an' niver be unaisy as thee 'st nothin' laid up again' a rainy day. If Adam^had been as aisy as thee, he'd niver ha' had no money to pay for thee. Take no thought for the morrow—take no thought—that's what thee 't allays sayin'; an' what comes on't? Why, as Adam has to take thought for thee."

80 ADAM BEDE.

" Those are the words o' the Bible, mother," said Seth. " They don't mean as we should be idle. They mean we shouldn't be over-anxious and worreting ourselves about what'11 happen to-morrow, but do our duty, and leave the rest to God's will."

" Ay, ay, that's the way wi' thee : thee allays makes a peck o' thy own words out o' a pint o' the Bible's. I donna see how thee't to know as ' take no thought for the morrow' means all that. An' when the Bible's such a big book, an' thee canst read all thro't, an ha' the pick o' the texes, I canna think why thee dostna pick better words as donna mean so much more nor they say. Adam doesna pick a that'n; I can understan' the tex as he's allays asayin', ' God helps them as helps theirsens.' "

"Nay, mother," said Seth, "that's no text o' the Bible. It comes out of a book as Adam picked up at the stall at Treddles'on. It was wrote by a knowing man, but over-worldly, I doubt. However, that saying 's partly true ; for the Bible tells us we must be workers together with God."

"WeU, how 'm I to know ? It sounds like a tex. But what's th' matter wi' th' lad ? Thee 't hardly atin' a bit o' supper. Dostna mean to ha' no more nor that bit o' oat-cake ? An' thee lookst as white as a flick o' new bacon. AYhat's th' matter wi' thee ?"

ADAM BEDE. 81

"Xotliing to mind about, mother; I'm not hungry. I'll just look in at Adam again, and see if he'll let me go on with the cofl&n."

"Ha' a drop o' warm broth," said Lisbeth, whose motherly feeling now got the better of her "natterino:" habit. "I'll set two-three sticks ali<?ht in a minute."

"Nay, mother, thank thee ; thee 't very good," said Seth, gratefully ; and encouraged by this touch of tenderness, he went on : " Let me pray a bit with thee for father, and Adam, and all of us—it'll comfort thee, happen, more than thee thinkst." " WeU, I've nothin' to say again' it." Li.sbeth, though disposed always to take the negative side in her conversations with Seth, had a vague sense that there was some comfort and safety in the fact of his piety, and that it somehow relieved her from the trouble of any spiritual transactions on her own behalf

So the mother and son knelt do^vn together, and Seth prayed for the poor wandering father, and for those who were sorrowing for him at home. And when he came to -the petition that Adam might never be called to set up his tent in a far country, but that his mother might be cheered and com

VOL. I. F

forted by his presence all the days of her pilgrimage, Lisbeth's ready tears flowed again, and she wept aloud.

When they rose from their knees, Setli went to Adam again, and said, " Wilt only lie down for an hour or two, and let me go on the while ?"

" No, Seth, no. Make mother go to bed, and go thyself."

Meantime Lisbeth had dried her eyes, and now followed Seth, holding something in her hands. It was the brown-and-yellow platter containing the baked potatoes with the gTavy in them, and bits of meat, which she had cut and mixed among them. Those were dear times, when wheaten bread and fresh meat were delicacies to working people. She set the dish down rather timidly on the bench by Adam's side, and said, " Thee canst pick a bit while thee 't workin'. I'll bring thee another drop o' water."

" Ay, mother, do," said Adam kindly, " I'm getting very thirsty."

In half an hour all was quiet; no sound was to be heard in the house but the loud tickino; of the old day-clock, and the ringing of Adam's tools. The night was very still: when Adam opened the door to look out at twelve o'clock, the only motion seemed

to be in the glowing, twinkling stars ; every blade of grass was asleep.

Bodily haste and exertion usually leave our thoughts very much at the mercy of our feelings and imagination ; and it was so to-night with Adam. While his muscles were working lustily, his mind seemed as passive as a spectator at a diorama: scenes of the sad past, and probably sad future, floating before him, and giving place one to the other in swift succession.

He saw how it would be to-morrow morning, when he had carried the coffin to Broxton and was at home again, having his breakfast: his father perhaps would come in, ashamed to meet his son's glance—

would sit down, looking older and more tottering than he had done the morning before, and hang down his head, examining the floor-quarries ; while Lisbeth would ask him how he supposed the coffin had been got ready, that he had slinked off and left undone, for Lisbeth was always the first to utter the word of reproach, although she cried at Adam's severity towards his father.

" So it -Nvill go on, worsening and worsening," thought Adam ; " there's no shpping up-hill again, and no standing still when once you've begun to slip

84 ADAM BEDE.

down/' And then the day came back to him when he was a little fellow and used to run by his father's side, proud to be taken out to work, and prouder still to hear his father boasting to his fellow-workmen how " the little chap had an uncommon notion o' carpentering." What a fine active fellow his father was then ! When people asked Adam whose little lad he was ? he had a sense of distinction as he answered, " I'm Thias Bede's lad"—he was quite sure everybody knew Thias Bede: didn't he make the wonderful pigeon-house at Broxton parsonage ? Those were happy days, especially when Seth, who was three years the younger, began to go out workins^ too, and Adam beo:an to be a teacher as well as a learner. But then came the days of sadness, when Adam was some way on in his teens, and Thias began to loiter at the public-houses, and Lisbeth began to cry at home, and to pour forth her complaints in the hearing: of her sons. Adam remembered well the night of shame and anguish when he first saw his father quite wild and foolish, shouting a song out fitfully among his drunken companions at the " Waggon Overthrown." He had run away once when he was only eighteen, making his escape in the morning twilight with a little blue bundle over

his shoulder, and his "mensuration book" in his pocket, and saying to himself very decidedly that he could bear the vexations of home no longer—he would go and seek his fortune, setting up his stick at the crossways and bending his steps the way it fell. But by the time he

got to Stoniton, the thought of his mother and Seth, left behind to endure everything without him, became too importunate, and his resolution failed him. He came back the next day, but the misery and terror his mother had gone through in those two days had haunted her ever since.

" No 1" Adam said to himself to-night, " that must never happen again. It 'ud make a poor balance when my doings are cast up at the last, if my poor old mother stood o' the wrong side. My back's broad enough and strong enough ; I should be no better than a coward to go away and leave the troubles to be borne by them as aren't half so able. ' They that are strong ought to bear the infirmities of those that are weak, and not to please themselves/ There's a text wants no candle to show't; it shines by its own light. It's plain enough you get into the wrong road i' this life if you run after this and that only for the sake o' making things easy and pleasant

86 ADAM BEDE.

to yourself. A pig may poke Ms nose into the trough and think o' nothing outside it; but if you've got a man's heart and soul in you, you can't be easy a-making your own bed an' leaving the rest to lie on the stones. Nay, nay, I'll never slip my neck out o' the yoke, and leave the load to be drawn by the weak 'uns. Father's a sore cross to me, an 's likely to be for many a long year to come. What then ? I've got the health, and the limbs, and the sperrit to bear it."

At this moment a smart ra]3, as if with a willow wand, was given at the house door, and Gyp, instead of barking, as might have been expected, gave a loud howl. Adam, very much startled, went at once to the door and opened it. Nothing was there: all was still, as when he opened it an hour before : the leaves were motionless, and the light of the stars showed the placid fields on both sides of the brook quite empty of visible life. Adam walked round the house, and still saw nothing except a rat which darted into the woodshed as he passed. He went in again, wondering; the sound was so peculiar, that, the moment he heard it, it called up the image of the "willow

wand striking the door. He could not help a little shudder, as he remembered how often his

mother had told him of just such a sound coming as a sign when some one was dying. Adam was not a man to be gratuitously superstitious ; but he had the blood of the peasant in him as well as of the artisan, and a peasant can no more help believing in a traditional superstition than a horse can help trembling ^Then he sees a camel. Besides, he had that mental combination which is at once humble in the region of mystery and keen in the region of knowledge : it was the depth of his reverence quite as much as his hard common-sense, which gave him his disinclination to doctrinal religion, and he often checked Seth's argumentative spiritualism by saying, "Eh, it's a big mystery; thee know'st but little about it." And so it happened that Adam was at once penetrating and credulous. If a new building had fallen down and he had been told that this was a divine judgment, he would have said, " May be ; but the bearing o' the roof and walls wasn't right, else it wouldn't ha' come down ;" yet he believed in dreams and prognostics, and you see he shuddered at the idea of the stroke with the willow wand.

But he had the best antidote against imaffrinative dread in the necessity for getting on with the coffin, and for the next ten minutes his hammer was ringing

SO uninterruptedly that other sounds, if there were any, might well be overpowered. A pause came, however, when he had to take up his ruler, and now again came the strange rap, and again Gyp howled. Adam was at the door without the loss of a moment; but again all was still, and the starlight showed there was nothing but the dew-laden grass in front of the cottage.

Adam for a moment thought uncomfortably about his father ; but of late years he had never come home at dark hours from Treddleston, and there was every reason for believing that he was then sleeping off his drunkenness at the "Waorcron Overthrown/" Besides, to Adam the conception of the future was so inseparable from the painful image of his father, that the fear of any fatal accident to him was

excluded by the deeply-infixed fear of his continual degradation. The next thought that occurred to him was one that made him slip off his shoes and tread lightly up-stairs, to listen at the bedroom doors. But both Seth and his mother were breathing regularly.

Adam came down and set to work again, saying to himself, " I won't open the door again. It's no use staring about to catch sight of a sound. Maybe there's a world about us as we can't see, but th' ear's

ADAM BEDE. 89

quicker than the eye, and catches a sound from't now and then. Some people think they get a sight on't too, but they're mostly folks whose eyes are not much use to 'em at anything else. For my part, I think it's better to see when your perpendicular's true, than to see a ghost."

Such thoughts as these are apt to grow stronger and stronger as daylight quenches the candles and the birds begin to sing. By the time the red sunlight shone on the brass nails that formed the initials on the lid of the coffin, any lingering foreboding from the sound of the willow wand was merged in satisfaction that the work was done and the promise redeemed. There was no need to call Seth, for he was already moving overhead, and presently came down stairs.

" Now, lad," said Adam, as Seth made his appearance, " the coffin's done, and we can take it over to Brox'on, and be back again before half after six. I'll take a mouthful o' oat-cake, and then we'll be off"

The coffin was soon propped on the tall shoulders of the two brothers, and they were making their way, followed close by Gyp, out of the little woodyard into the lane at the back of the house. It was but

about a mile and a half to Broxton over the opposite slope, and their road wound very pleasantly along lanes and across fields, where the pale woodbines and the dog-roses were scenting the hedgerows, and the birds were twittering and trilling in the tall leafy boughs of

oak and elm. It was a strangely-mingled picture—the fresh youth of the summer morning, with its Eden-like peace and loveliness, the stalwart strength of the two brothers in their rusty working clothes, and the long coffin on their shoulders. They paused for the last time before a small farmhouse outside the village of Broxton. By six o'clock the task was done, the coffin nailed down, and Adam and Seth were on their way home. They chose a shorter way homeward, which would take them across the fields and the brook in front of the house. Adam had not mentioned to Seth what had happened in the night, but he still retained sufficient impression from it himself to say —

" Seth, lad, if father isn't come home by the time we've had our breakfast, I think it'll be as well for thee to go over to Treddles'on and look after him, and thee canst get me the brass wire I want. Never mind about losing an hour at thy work; we can make that up. What dost say ?"

" I'm willing," said Seth. " But see what clouds

have gathered since we set out. I'm thinking we shall have more rain. It'll be a sore time for th' haymaking if the meadows are flooded again. The brook's fine and full now; another day's rain 'ud cover the plank, and we should have to go round by the road."

They were coming across the valley now, and had entered the pasture through which the brook ran.

" Why, what's that sticking against the willow ?" continued Seth, beuinniiiio- to walk faster. Adam's heart rose to his mouth : the vague anxiety about his father was changed into a gi^eat dread. He made no answer to Seth, but ran forward, preceded by Gyp, who began to bark uneasily; and in two moments he was at the bridge.

This was what the omen meant, then ! And the grey-haired father, of whom he had thought with a sort of hardness a few hours ago, as certain to live to be a thorn in his side, was perhaps even then struggling with that watery death. This was the first thouojht that

flashed throo[^]h Adam's conscience, before he had time to seize the coat and drag out the tall heavy body. Seth was already by his side, helping him, and when they had it on the bank, the two sons in the first moments knelt and looked with mute awe at the glazed eyes, forgetting

92 ADAM BEDE.

that there was need for action—forgetting everything but that their father lay dead before them. Adam was the first to speak.

" I'll run to mother," he said, in a loud whisper. " I'll be back to thee in a minute!"

Poor Lisbeth was busy preparing her sons' breakfast, and their porridge was already steaming on the fire. Her kitchen always looked the pink of cleanliness, but this morning she was more than usually bent on making her hearth and breakfast-table look comfortable and inviting.

" The lads 'ull be fine an' himgry," she said, half aloud, as she stirred the porridge. "It's a good step to Brox'on, an' its hungiy air o'er the hill— wi' that heavy cofiin too. Eh ! it's heavier now, wi' poor Bob Tholer in't. Howiver, I've made a drap more porridge nor common this mornin'. The feyther 'ull happen come in arter a bit. Not as he'll ate much porridge. He swallers sixpennorth o' ale, an' saves a hap'orth o' porridge—that's his way o' layin by money, as I've told him many a time, an' am likely to teU him again afore the day's out. Eh! poor mon, he takes it quiet enough; there's no denyin' that."

But now Lisbeth heai[^]d the heavy " thud" of a running footstep on the turf, and, turning quickly

ADA3I BEDE. 93

towards the door, she saw Adam enter, looking so pale and overwhelmed that she screamed aloud and rushed towards him before he had time to speak.

"Hush, mother," Adam said, rather hoarsely, "don't be frightened. Father's tumbled into the water. Belike we may bring him round again. Seth and me are going to carry him in. Get a blanket, and make it hot at the fire."

In reality Adam was convinced that his father was dead, but he knew there was no other way of repressing his mother's impetuous wailing grief than by occupying her with some active task which had hope in it.

He ran back to Seth, and the two sons lifted the sad burthen in heartstricken silence. The wideopen glazed eyes were grey, like Seth's, and had once looked with mild pride on the boys before whom Thias had lived to hang his head in shame. Seth's chief feeling was awe and distress at this sudden snatching away of his father's soul; but Adam's mind rushed back over the past in a flood of relenting and pity. When death, the great Reconciler, has come, it is never our tenderness that we repent of, but our severity.

CHAPTER V.

THE EECTOUE.

Before twelve o'clock there had been some heavy storms of rain, and the water lay in deep gutters on the sides of the gravel-walks in the garden of Broxton Parsonage; the great Provence roses had been cruelly tossed by the wind and beaten by the rain, and all the delicate-stemmed border-flowers had been dashed down and stained with the wet soil. A melancholy morning—because it was nearly time hay-harvest should begin, and instead of that the meadows were likely to be flooded.

But people who have pleasant homes get in-door enjoyments that they would never think of but for the rain. If it had not been a wet morning, Mr Irwine would not have been in the dininsj-room playing at chess with his mother, and he loves both his mother and chess quite well enough to j^ass some cloudy hours very easily by their help. Let

ADAM BEDE. 95

me take you into that dining-room, and show you the Eev. Adolphus Irwine, Eector of Broxton, Vicar of Hay si ope, and Vicar of Blythe, a phiralist at whom the severest Church-reformer would have found it difficult to look sour. We will enter very softly, and stand still in the open doorway, without awaking the glossy-brown setter who is stretched across the hearth, with her two puppies beside her ; or the pug, who is dozing, mth his black muzzle aloft, like a sleepy president.

The room is a large and lofty one, with an ample mullioned oriel window at one end ; the walls, you see, are new, and not yet painted; but the fui-niture, though originally of an expensive sort, is old and scanty, and there is no drapery about the window. The crimson cloth over the large dining-table is very threadbare, though it contrasts pleasantly enough with the dead hue of the plaster on the walls ; but on this cloth there is a massive silver waiter with a decanter of water on it, of the same pattern as two larger ones that are propped up on the sideboard with a coat-of-arms conspicuous in their centre. You suspect at once that the inhabitants of this room have inherited more blood than wealth, and would not be surprised to find that Mr Irwine had a finely

cut nostril and upper lip; but at present we can only see that he has a broad flat back and an abundance of powdered hair, all thrown backward and tied behind with a black ribbon—a bit of conservatism in costume which tells you that he is not a young man. He will perhaps turn round by-and-by, and in the mean time we can look at that stately old lady, his mother, a beautiful aged brunette, whose richtoned complexion is well set off by the complex wrappings of pure white cambric and lace about her head and neck. She is as erect in her comely embonpoint as a statue of Ceres, and her dark face, with its delicate aquiline nose, firm proud mouth, and small intense black eye, is so keen and sarcastic in its expression that you instinctively substitute a pack of cards for the chess-men, and imamne her tellino; your fortune. The small brown hand with which

she is lifting her queen is laden with pearls, diamonds, and turquoises ; and a large black veil is very carefully adjusted over the crown of her cap, and falls in sharp contrast on the white folds about her neck. It must take a long time to dress that old lady in the morning ! But it seems a law of nature that she should be drest so : she is clearly one of those children of royalty who have never doubted

their right divine, and never met with any one so absurd as to question it.

" There, Dauphin, tell me what that is! " says this magnificent old lady, as she deposits her queen very quietly and folds her arms. " I should be sorry to utter a word disagreeable to your feelings."

" Ah ! you witch-mother, you sorceress ! How is a Christian man to win a game of you ? I should have sprinkled the board with holy water before we began. You've not won that game by fair means, now, so don't pretend it."

" Yes, yes, that's what the beaten have always said of great conquerors. But see, there's the sunshine falling on the board, to show you more clearly what a foolish move you made with that pawn. Come, shall I give you another chance ?"

" No, mother, I shall leave you to your own conscience, now it's clearing up. We must go and splash up the mud a little, mustn't we, Juno?" This was addressed to the brown setter, who had jumped up at the sound of the voices and laid her nose in an insinuating way on her master's leg. " But I must go up-stairs first and see Anne. I was
VOL. L G

called away to Tlioler's funeral just when I was ofoino- before."

" It's of no use, child; she can't speak to you. Kate says she has one of her worst headaches this morning."

" O she likes me to go and see her just the same; she's never too ill to care about that/"

If you know how much of human speech is mere purposeless impulse or habit, you will not wonder when I tell you that this identical objection had been made, and had received the same kind of answer, many hundred times in the course of the fifteen years that Mr Irwine's sister Anne had been an invalid. Splendid old ladies, who take a longtime to dress in the morning, have often shght sympathy with sickly daughters.

But while Mr Irwine was still seated, leaning back in his chair and stroking Juno's head, the servant came to the door and said, " If you please, sir, Joshua Bann wishes to speak with you, if you're at liberty."

" Let him be shown in here," said Mrs Irwine, taking up her knitting. " I always like to hear what Mr Rann has got to say. His shoes will be dirty, but see that he wipes them, Carrol."

ADAM BEDE. 99

In two minutes Mr Rann appeared at the door with very deferential bows, which, however, were far from conciliating Pug, who gave a sharp bark, and ran across the room to reconnoitre the stranger's legs; while the two puppies, regarding Mr Rann's prominent calf and ribbed worsted stockings from a more sensuous point of view, plunged and growled over them in great enjoyment ^leantime, Mr Irwine turned round his chair and said ;

" Well, Joshua, anything the matter at Hay slope, that you've come over this damp morning? Sit down, sit down. Never mind the dogs ; give them a friendly kick. Here, Pug, you rascal! "

It is very pleasant to see some men turn round ; pleasant as a sudden rush of warm air in winter, or the flash of fire-Kdit in the chill dusk. Mr Irwine was one of those men. He bore the same sort of resemblance to his mother that our loving memory of a friend's face

often bears to the face itself: the lines were all more generous, the smile brighter, the expression heartier. If the outline had been less finely cut, his face might have been called jolly; but that was not the right word for its mixture of bonhommie and distinction.

" Thank your reverence/' answered Mr Rami.

100 ADAM BEDE.

endeavouring to look unconcerned about his legs, but shaking them alternately to keep off the puppies ; " ril stand, if you please, as more becoming. I hope I see you and Mrs Irwine well, an']Miss Irwine—an' Miss Anne, I hope's as well as usual."

" Yes, Joshua, thank you. You see how blooming my mother looks. She beats us younger people hollow. But what's the matter ?"

" Why, sir, I had to come to Brox'on to deliver some work, and I thoug^ht it but riobt to call and let you know the goins-on as there's been i' the village, such as I hanna seen i' my time, and I've lived in it man and boy sixty year come St Thomas, and collected th' Easter dues for Mr Blick before your reverence come into the parish, and been at the ringin' o' every bell, and the diggin' o' every grave, and sung i' the quire long afore Bartle Massey come from nobody knows where, wi' his countersingin' and fine anthems, as puts everybody out but himself—one takin' it up after another like sheep a-bleatin' i' the fold. I know what belongs to bein' a parish clerk, and I know as I should be wantin' i' respect to your reverence, an' church, an' king, if I was t' allow such goins-on wi'out speakin'. I was

ADAM BEDE. IOI

took by surprise, an' kuowed nothin' on it beforehand, an' I was so flustered, I was clean as if I'd lost my tools. I hanna slep more nor four hour this night as is past an' gone ; an' then it was nothin' but nightmare, as tired me worse nor wakin'."

" Why, what in the world is the matter, Joshua ? Have the thieves been at the chiu'ch lead again ?"

" Thieves! no, sir,—an' yet, as I may say, it is thieves, an' a-thievin' the church, too. It's the Methodisses as is like to get th' upper hand i' th' parish, if yom- reverence an' his honour. Squire Donnithome, doesna think well to say the word an' forbid it. Not as I'm a dictatin' to you, sir ; I'm not forgettin' myself so far as to be wise above my betters. Howiver, whether I'm wise or no, that's neither here nor there, but what I've got to say I say — as the young Methodis woman, as is at Master Poyser's, was a-preachin' an' a-prayin' on the Green last night, as sure as I'm a-stannin' afore your reverence now."

" Preaching on the Green ! " said Mr Irwine, looking surprised, but quite serene. " What, that pale pretty young woman I've seen at Poyser's ? I saw she was a Methodist, or Quaker, or somethiuL^ of

102 ADAM BEDE.

that sort, by her dress, but I didn't know she was a preacher."

" It's a true word as I say, sir," rejoined Mr Rann, compressing his mouth into a semicircular form, and pausing long enough to indicate three notes of exclamation. " She preached on the Green last night; an' she's laid hold o' Chad's Bess, as the fjirl's been i' fits welly iver sin'."

" Well, Bessy Cranage is a hearty-looking lass, I daresay she'll come round again, Joshua Did anybody else go into fits ?"

" No, sir, I canna say as they did. But there's no knowin' what'll come, if we're t' have such preachins as that agoin' on ivery week—there'll be no livin' i' th' village. For them Methodisses make folks believe as if they take a mug o' drink extry, an' make theu^elves a bit comfortable, they'll have to go to hell for't as sure as they're bom. I'm not a tipplin' man nor a drunkard—nobody can say it on me—but I like a extry quart at Easter or Christmas time, as is nat'ral when

we're goin' the rounds a-singin', an' folks offer't you for nothin'; or when I'm a-collectin' the dues ; an' I like a pint, wi' my pipe, an' a neighbourly chat at Mester Casson's now an' then, for I was brought up i' th' Church,

ADAM BEDE. 103

thank God, an' ha' been a parish clerk this twoan'-thii-ty year : I should know what the church religion is."

" Well, what's your advice, Joshua ? What do you think should be done ? "

" Well, your reverence, I'm not for takin' any measures again' the young woman. She's well enough if she'd let alone preachin,' an' I hear as she's a-goin' away back to her own country soon. She's Mr Poyser's own niece, an' I donna wish to say what's anjways disrespectful o' th' family at th' Hall Farm, as I've measured for shoes, little an' big, welly iver sin' I've been a shoemaker. But there's that Will ^laskery, sir, as is the rampageousest Methodis as can be, an' I make no doubt it was him as stirred up th' young woman to preach last night, an' he'll be a-bringin' other folks to preach from Treddles'on, if his comb isn't cut a bit; an' I think as he should be let know as he isna t'have the makin' an' mendin' o' church carts an' implemens, let alone staj-in' i' that house an' yard as is Squire Donnithorne's."

" Well, but you say yourself, Joshua, that you never knew any one come to preach on the Green before ; why should you think they'U come again ?

104 ADAM BEDE.

The Metliodists don't come to preach in little villages like Haysloj^e, where there's only a handful of labourers, too tired to listen to them. They might almost as well go and preach on the Binton Hills. Will Maskery is no preacher himself, I think."

"Nay, sir, he's no gift at stringin' the words together wi'out book; he'd be stuck fast like a cow i' wet clay. But he's got tongue enough to speak disrespectful about's neebors, for he said as I was a blind Pharisee ;—a-usin' the Bible i' that way to find nicknames for folks as are his elders an' betters !—and what's worse, he's been heard to say very unbecomui' words about your reverence ; for I could bring them as 'ud swear as he called you a ' dumb dog,' an' a ' idle shepherd.' You'll forgi'e me for sayin' such things over again."

" Better not, better not, Joshua. Let evil words die as soon as they're spoken. Will Maskery might be a great deal worse fellow than he is. He used to be a wild drunken rascal, neglecting his work and beating his wife, they told me; now he's thrifty and decent, and he and his wife look comfortable together. If you can bring me any proof that he interferes with his neighbours, and creates

ADAM BEDE. 105

any disturbance, I shall think it my duty as a clergyman and a magistrate to interfere. But it wouldn't become wise people, like you and me, to be making a fuss about trifles, as if we thought the Church was in danger because Will Maskery lets his tongue wag rather foolishly, or a young woman talks in a serious way to a handful of people on the Green. We must ' live and let live,' Joshua, in religion as well as in other things. You go on doing your duty, as parish clerk and sexton, as well as you've always done it, and making those capital thick boots for your neighbours, and things won't go far ^vrong in Hayslope, depend upon it."

" Your reverence is very good to say so ; an' I'm sensible as, you not livin' i' the parish, there's more upo' my shoulders."

" To be sure ; and you must mind and not lowei" the Church in people's eyes by seeming to be frightened about it for a little thing, Joshua. I shall trust to your good sense, now, to take no notice at all of what Will Maskery says, either about you or me. You and your neighboiu-s can go on taking your pot of beer soberly, when you've done your day's work, like good churchmen ; and if Will

Maskery doesn't like to join you, but to go to a prayer-meeting at Treddleston instead, let him ; that's no business of yours, so long as he doesn't hinder you from doing what you like. And as to people saying a few idle words about us, we must not mind that, any more than the old church-steeple minds the rooks cawing about it. Will Maskery comes to church every Sunday afternoon, and does his wheelwright's business steadily in the weekdays, and as long as he does that he must be let alone."

" Ah, sir, but when he comes to church, he sits an' shakes his head, an' looks as sour an' as coxy when we're a-singin', as I should like to fetch him a rap across the jowl—God forgi'e me—an' Mrs Irwine, an' your reverence, too, for speakin' so afore you. An' he said as our Christmas singin' was no better nor the cracklin' o' thorns under a pot."

" Well, he's got a bad ear for music, Joshua. ^llen people have wooden heads, you know, it can't be helped. He won't bring the other people in Hayslope round to his opinion, while you go on singing as well as you do."

" Yes, sir, but it turns a man's stomach t' hear

ADAM BEDE. 107

the Scripture misused i' that way. I know as mucli o' the words o' the Bible as he does, an* could say the Psalms right through i' my sleep if you was to pinch me; but I know better nor to take 'em to say my own say wi'. I might as well take the Sacriment-cup home and use it at meals."

" That's a very sensible remark of yours, Joshua ; but, as I said before "

While Mr Irwine was speaking, the sound of a booted step, and the chnk of a spur, were heard on the stone floor of the entrance-hall,

and Joshua Rann moved hastily aside from the doorway to make room for some one who paused there, and said, in a ringing tenor voice,

" Godson Arthur ;—may he come in ?"

" Come in, come in, godson ! " Mrs Irwdne answered, in the deep half - masculine tone which belongs to the \dgorous old woman, and there entered a young gentleman in a riding-dress, vdih his right arm in a sling ; whereupon followed that pleasant confusion of laughing interjections, and hand-shakings, and " How are you's ?" mingled with joyous short barks and wagging of tails on the part of the canine members of the family, which

108 ADAM BEDE.

tells that the visitor is on the best terms with the visited. The young gentleman was Arthur Donnithorne, known in Hayslope, variously, as " the young squii'e," " the heir," and " the captain." He was only a captain in the Loamshu^e Militia ; but to the Hayslope tenants he was more intensely a captain than all the young gentlemen of the same rank in His]\lajesty's regulars—he outshone them as the planet Juj^iter outshines the Milky Way. If you want to know more particularly how he looked, call to your remembrance some tawnywhiskered, brown-locked, clear-complexioned young Englishman whom you have met "vvith in a foreign town, and been proud of as a fellow-countryman— well-washed, high-bred, white-handed, yet looking as if he could deliver well from the left shoulder, and floor his man : I will not be so much of a tailor as to trouble your imagination with the difference of costume, and insist on the striped waistcoat, long-tailed coat, and low-top boots.

Turning round to take a chair, Captain Donnithorne said, " But don't let me interrupt Joshua's business—he has something to say."

"Humbly begging your honour's pardon," said Joshua, bowing low, " there was one thing I had to

ADAM BEDE. 109

say to his reverence as other things had drove out o' my head."

" Out with it, Joshua, quickly! " said Mr Irwine.

" Belike, sir, you havena heared as Thias Bede 's dead—drownded this morning, or more like overnight, i' the Willow Brook, again' the bridge right i' front o' the house."

" Ah ! " exclaimed both the gentlemen at once, as if they were a good deal interested in the information.

" An' Seth Bede's been to me this morning to say he wished me to tell your reverence as his brother Adam begged of you particular t' allow his father's grave to be dug by the White Thorn, because his mother's set her heart on it, on account of a dream as she had; an' they'd ha' come theirselves to ask you, but they've so much to see after with the crowner, an' that; an' their mother's took on so, an' wants 'em to make sure o' the spot for fear somebody else should take it. An' if your reverence sees well and good, I'll send my boy to tell 'em as soon as I get home ; an' that's why I make bold to trouble you wi' it, his honour being present."

" To be sure, Joshua, to be sure, they shall have

110 ADAM BEDE.

it. Ill ride round to Adam myself, and see liim. Send your boy, however, to say they shall have the grave, lest anything should happen to detain me. And now, good morning, Joshua; go into the kitchen and have some ale!"

" Poor old Thias ! " said Mr Irwine, when Joshua was gone. " I'm afraid the drink helped the brook to drown him. I should have been glad for the load to have been taken oiff my friend Adam's shoulders in a less painful way. That fine fellow has been propping up his father from ruin for the last five or six years."

" He's a regular trump, is Adam," said Captain Donnithorne. " When I was a little fellow, and Adam was a strapping lad of fifteen, and taught me carpentering, I used to think if ever I was a rich sultan, I would make Adam my grand-vizier. And I believe now, he would bear the exaltation as well as any poor wise man in an Eastern stoy. If ever I live to be a large-acred man, instead of a poor devil, with a mortgaged allowance of pocket-money, I'll have Adam for my right-hand. He shall manage my woods for me, for he seems to have a better notion of those tj gs than any man I ever met with ; and I know he would make twice the money

ADAM BEDE. III

of them that my grandfather does, with that miserable old Satchell to manage, who understands no more about timber than an old carp. I've mentioned the subject to my grandfather once or twice, but for some reason or other he has a dislike to Adam, and I can do nothing. But come, your reverence, are you for a ride with me ? It's splendid out of doors now. "We can go to Adam's together, if you like; but I want to call at the Hall Farm on my way, to look at the whelps Poyser is keeping for me."

" You must stay and have lunch first, Arthur," said Mrs Irwine. " It's nearly two. Carrol will bring it in directly."

" I want to go to the Hall Farm too," said Mr Irvine, " to have another look at the little Me lodist who is staying there. Joshua tells me sbr was preaching on the Green last night."

" O, by Jove ! " said Captain Donnithorne, laughing. " Why, she looks as quiet as a mouse. There's something rather striking about her, though. I positively felt quite bashful the first time I saw her : she was sitting stooping over her sewing in the sunshine outside the house, when I rode up and called out, without noticing that she was a stranger, ' Is

Martin Poyser at home ?' I declare, when she got up and looked at me, and just said, ' He's in the house, I believe ; I'll go and call him,' I felt quite ashamed of having spoken so abruptly to her. She looked like St Catherine in a quaker dress. It's a type of face one rarely sees among our common people."

" I should like to see the young woman, Dauphin," said Mrs Irwine. " Make her come here on some pretext or other."

" I don't know how I can manage that, mother ; it will hardly do for me to patronise a Methodist preacher, even if she would consent to be patronised by an idle shepherd, as Will Maskery calls me. You should have come in a little sooner, Arthur, to hear Joshua's denunciation of his neighbour Will Maskery. The old fellow wants me to excommunicate the wheelwright, and then deliver him over to the civil arm, — that is to say, to your grandfather,—to be turned out of house and yard. If I chose to interfere in this business, now, I might get up as pretty a story of hatred and persecution as the Methodists need desire to publish in the next number of their magazine. It wouldn't take me much trouble to persuade Chad Cranage and half-a

ADAM BEDE. 113

dozen other l)ull-headed fellows, that they would be doing an acceptable service to the Church by hunting Will ^laskery out of the village with rope-ends and pitchforks; and then, when I had furnished them with half a sovereign to get gloriously drunk after their exertions, I should have put the cliniax to as pretty a farce as any of my brother clergy have set going in their parishes for the last thii^ty years."

" It is really insolent of the man, though, to call you an 'idle shepherd,' and a 'dumb dog,'" said Mrs Irwine : " I should be inclined to check him a little there. You are too easy-tempered, Dauphin."

" Why, mother, you don't think it would be a good way of sustaining my dignity to set about vindicating myself from the aspersions of Will

Maskery ? Besides, I'm not so sure that they are aspersions. I am a lazy fellow, and get terribly heavy in my saddle; not to mention that I'm always spending more than I can afford in bricks and mortar, so that I get savage at a lame beggar when he asks me for sixpence. Those poor lean cobblers, who think

they can help to regenerate mankind by setting out VOL. I. H

J 14 ADAM BEDE.

to preach in the morning twilight before they begin their day's work, may well have a poor opinion of me. But come, let us have our luncheon. Isn't Kate coming to lunch ? "

" Miss Irwine told Bridget to take her lunch up-stairs," said Carrol; " she can't leave Miss Anne."

" O, very well. Tell Bridget to say I'll go up and see Miss Anne presently. You can use your right arm quite well now, Arthur," Mr Irwine continued, observing that Captain Donnithorne had taken his arm out of the sling.

" Yes, pretty well; but Godwin insists on my keeping it up constantly for some time to come. I hope I shall be able to get away to the regiment, though, in the beginning of August. It's a desperately dull business being shut up at the chase in the summer months, when one can neither hunt nor shoot, so as to make one's-self pleasantly sleepy in the evening. However, we are to astonish the echoes on the 30th of July. My grandfather has given me carte blanche for once, and I promise you the entertainment shall be worthy of the occasion. The world will not see the grand epoch of my majority twice. I think I shall have a lofty throne for you,

ADAM BEDE. 1 1 T)

godmamma, or rather two, one on the lawn and another in the ball-room, that you may sit and look down upon us like an Olympian goddess/'

" I mean to bring out my best brocade, that I wore at your christening twenty years ago," said Mrs Irwine. " Ah, I think I shall see your poor mother flitting about in her white dress, which looked to me almost like a shroud that very day; and it was her shroud only three months after; and your little cap and christening dress were buried with her too. She had set her heart on that, sweet soul! Thank God you take after your mother's family, Arthur. If you had been a puny, wiry, yellow baby, I wouldn't have stood godmother to you. I should have been sure you would turn out a Donnithorne. But you were such a broad-faced, broadchested, loud-screaming rascal, I knew you were every inch of you a Tradgett."

" But you might have been a little too hasty there, mother," said Mr Irwine, smiling. " Don't you remember how it was with Juno's last pups ? One of them was the very image of its mother, but it had two or three of its father's tricks notwithstanding. Nature is clever enough to cheat even you, mother."

116 ADAM BEDE.

" Nonsense, child ! Nature never makes a ferret ill the shape of a mastiff. You'll never persuade me that I can't tell what men are by their outsides. If I don't like a man's looks, depend upon it I shall never like him. I don't want to know people that look ugly and disagreeable, any more than I want to taste dishes that look disagreeable. If they make me shudder at the first glance, I say, take them away. An ugly, piggish, or fishy eye, now, makes me feel quite ill; it's like a bad smell."

" Talking of eyes," said Captain Domiithorne, " that reminds me, that I've got a book I meant to bring you, godmamma. It came down in a parcel from London the other day. I know you are fond of queer, wizard-like stories. It's a volume of poems, ' Lyrical Ballads : ' most of them seem to be twaddling stuff; but the first is in a different style —" The Ancient Mariner" is the title. I can hardly make head or tail of it as a story, but it's a strange, striking thing. I'll send it over to you ; and there are some other books that you may like to see, Irwine— pamphlets about Antinomianism and Evangelicalism, whatever they

may be. I can't think what the fellow means by sending such things to me. I've written to him, to desire that from hence

ADAM BEDE. 117

forth he will send me no book or pamphlet on anythinof that ends in ism."

" Well, I don't know that I'm very fond of is7ns myself; but I may as well look at the pamphlets ; they let one see what is going on. I've a little matter to attend to, Arthm^' continued Mr Irwine, rising to leave the room, " and then I shall be ready to set out with you/'

The little matter that Mr Irwine had to attend to took him up the old stone staircase (part of the house was very old), and made him pause before a door at which he knocked gently. " Come in," said a woman's voice, and he entered a room so darkened by blinds and curtains that Miss Kate, the thin middle-aged lady standing by the bedside, would not have had light enough for any other sort of work than the knitting which lay on the little table near her. But at present she was doing what required only the dimmest light—sponging the aching head that lay on the pillow with fresh vinegar. It was a small face, that of the poor sufferer; perhaps it had once been pretty, but now it was worn and sallow. Miss Kate came towards her brother and whispered, " Don't speak to her; she can't bear to be spoken to to-day." Anne's eyes were closed, and her brow

118 ADAM BEDE.

contracted as if from intense pain. Mr Irwine went to the bedside, and took up one of the delicate hands and kissed it; a slight pressure from the small finsers told him that it was worth while to have come up-stairs for the sake of doing that. He lingered a moment, looking at her, and then turned away and left the room, treading very gently—he had taken off his boots and put on slippers before he came up-stairs. Whoever remembers how many things he has declined to do even for himself, rather than have the trouble of putting on or taking off his boots, will not think this last detail insicrnificant.

And Mr Irwine's sisters, as any person of family within ten miles of Broxton could have testified, were such stupid uninteresting women ! It was quite a pity handsome, clever Mrs Irwine should have had such commonplace daughters. That fine old lady herself was worth driving ten miles to see, any day; her beauty, her well-preserved faculties, and her oldfashioned dignity, made her quite a graceful subject for conversation in turn with the Bang's health, the sweet new patterns in cotton dresses, the news from Egypt, and Lord Dacey's law-suit, which was fretting poor Lady Dacey to death. But no one ever thought

ADAM BEDE. 119

of mentioning the Miss Irwines, except the poor people in Broxton village, who regarded them as deep ill the science of medicine, and spoke of them vaguely as the "gentlefolks." If any one had asked old Jub Dummilow who gave him his flannel jacket, he would have answered, "the gentlefolks, last winter;" and widow Steene dwelt much on the virtues of the "stuff" the gentlefolks gave her for her cough. Under this name, too, they were used with great effect as a means of taming refractory children, so that at the sight of poor Miss Anne's sallow face, several small urchins had a terrified sense that she was cognisant of all their worst misdemeanours, and knew the precise number of stones with which they had intended to hit farmer Britton's ducks. But for all who saw them through a less mythical medium, the Miss Irwines were quite superfluous existences; inartistic figures crowding the canvass of life without adequate effect. Miss Anne, indeed, if her chronic headaches could have been accounted for by a pathetic story of disappointed love, might have had some romantic interest attached to her ; but no such story had either been known or invented concerning her, and the general impression was quite in accordance with

120 ADAM BEDE.

the fact that both the sisters were old maids for the prosaic reason, that they had never received an eligible offer.

Nevertheless, to speak paradoxically, the existence of insignificant people has very important consequences in the world. It can be shown to affect the price of bread and the rate of wages, to call forth many evil tempers from the selfish, and many heroisms from the sympathetic, and, in other ways, to play no small part in the tragedy of life. And if that handsome, generous-blooded clergyman, the Rev. Adolphus Irwine, had not had these two hopelessly-maiden sisters, his lot would have been shaped quite differently : he would very likely have taken a comely wife in his youth, and now, when his hair was getting grey under the powder, would have had tall sons and blooming daughters—such possessions, in short, as men commonly think will repay them for all the labour they take under the sun. As it was—having with all his three livings no more than seven hundred a-year, and seeing no way of keeping his splendid mother and his sickly sister, not to reckon a second sister, who was usually spoken of without any adjective, in such lady-like ease as became their birth and habits, and at the

ADAM BEDK. \21

same time providing for a family of his own—lie remained, you see, at the age of eight-and-forty, a bachelor, not making any merit of that renunciation, but saying, laughingly, if any one alluded to it, that he made it an excuse for many indulgences which a wife would never have allowed him. And perhaps he was the only person in the world who did not think his sisters uninteresting and superfluous ; for his was one of those large-hearted, sweet-blooded natures that never know a narrow or a grudging thought; epicurean, if you will, with no enthusiasm, no self-scourging sense of duty ; but yet, as you have seen, of a sufficiently subtle moral fibre to have an unwearying tenderness for obscure and monotonous suffering. It was his large-hearted indulgence that made him ignore his mother's hardness towards her daughters, which was the more striking from its contrast with her doting fondness towards himself: he held it no virtue to frown at irremediable faults.

See the difference between the impression a man makes on you when you walk by his side in familiar talk, or look at him in his home, and the figure he makes when seen from a lofty historical level, or even in the eyes of a critical neighbour who thinks

122 ADAM BEDE.

of him as an embodied system or opinion rather than as a man. Mr Roe, the "travelling preacher" stationed at Treddleston, had included Mr Irwine in a general statement concerning the church clergy in the surrounding district, whom he described as men given up to the lusts of the flesh and the pride of life; hunting and shooting, and adorning their own houses; asking what shall we eat, and what shall we drink, and wherewithal shall we be clothed —careless of dispensing the bread of life to their flocks, preaching at best but a carnal and soulbenumbing morality, and trafficking in the souls of men by receiving money for discharging the pastoral office in parishes where they did not so much as look on the faces of the people more than once a-year. The ecclesiastical historian, too, looking into parliamentary reports of that period, finds honourable members zealous for the Church, and untainted with any sympathy for the "tribe of canting Methodists," making statements scarcely less melancholy than that of Mr Eoe. And it is impossible for me to say that Mr Irwine was altogether belied by the generic classification assigned him. He really had no very lofty aims, no theological enthusiasm: if I were closely questioned, I

ADAM BEDE. 123

should be obliged to confess that he felt no serious alarms about the souls of his parishioners, and would have thought it a mere loss of time to talk in a doctrinal and awakening manner to old "Feythcr Taft" or even to Chad Cranage the blacksmith. If he had been in the habit of speaking theoretically, he would perhaps have said that the only healthy religion could take in such minds was that of certain dim but strong emotions, suffusing themselves as a hallowing influence over the family affections and neighbourly duties. He thought the custom of baptism more important than its doctrine,

and that the religious benefits the peasant drew from the church where his fathers worshipped and the sacred piece of turf where they lay buried, were but slightly dependent on a clear understanding of the Liturgy or the sermon. Clearly, the Rector was not what is called in these days an "earnest" man: he was fonder of church history than of divinity, and had much more insight into men's characters than interest in their opinions; he was neither laborious, nor obviously self-denying, nor very copious in alms-giving, and his theology, you perceive, was lax. His mental palate, indeed, was rather pagan, and found a savouriness in a quota

124 ADAM BEDE.

tion from Sophocles or Theocritus that was quite absent from any text in Isaiah or Amos. But if you feed young setter on raw flesh, how can you wonder at its retaining a relish for uncooked partridge in after life? and Mr Irwine's recollections of young enthusiasm and ambition were all associated with poetry and ethics that lay aloof from the Bible.

On the other hand, I must plead, for I have an affectionate partiality towards the Rector's memory, that he was not vindictive—and some philanthropists have been so; that he was not intolerant—and there is a rumour that some zealous theologians have not been altogether free from that blemish; that although he would probably have declined to give his body to be burned in any public cause, and was far from bestowing all his goods to feed the poor, he had that charity which has sometimes been lacking to very illustrious virtue—he was tender to other men's failings, and unwilling to impute evil. He was one of those men, and they are not the commonest, of whom we can know the best only by following them away from the market-place, the platform, and the pulpit, entering with them into their own homes, hearing the voice within which

ADAM BEDE. 125

they speak to the young and aged about their own hearthstone, and witness their thoughtful care for the everyday wants of everyday

companions, who take all their kindness as a matter of course, and not as a subject for panegyric.

Such men, happily, have lived in times when great abuses flourished, and have sometimes even been the living representatives of the abuses. That is a thought which might comfort us a little under the opposite fact—that it is better sometimes not to follow great reformers of abuses beyond the threshold of their homes.

But whatever you may think of !Mr Irwine now, if you had met him that June afternoon riding on his grey cob, with his dogs running beside him— portly, upright, manly, with a good-natured smile on his finely-turned lips as he talked to his dashing young companion on the bay mare, you must have felt that, however ill he harmonised with sound theories of the clerical office, he somehow harmonised extremely well with that peaceful landscape.

See them in the bright sunlight, interrupted every now and then by rolling masses of cloud, ascending the slope from the Broxton side, where the tall

126 ADAM bp:de.

gables and elms of the Rectory predominate over the tiny white-washed church. They will soon be in the parish of Hayslope; the grey church-tower and village roofs lie before them to the left, and farther on, to the right, they can just see the chimneys of the Hall Farm.

CHAPTER VI.

THE HALL FARM.

Evidently that gate is never opened: for the longgrass and the great hemlocks grow close against it; and if it were opened, it is so rusty, that the force necessary to turn it on its hinges would be likely to pull down the square stone-built pillars, to the detriment of the two stone lionesses which grin with a doubtful carnivorous affability above a coat of arms, surmounting each of the pillars. It would be easy

enough, by the aid of the nicks in the stone pillars, to climb over the brick wall with its smooth stone coping; but by putting our eyes close to the rusty bars of the gate, we can see the house well enough, and all but the very comers of the grassy enclosure.

It is a very fine old place, of red brick, softened by a pale powdery lichen, which has dispersed itself with happy irregularity, so as to bring the red brick

128 ADAM BEDE.

into terms of friendly companionship with the limestone ornaments surroundino; the three gables, the windows, and the door-place. But the windows are patched with wooden panes, and the door, I think, is like the gate—it is never opened : how it would groan and grate against the stone floor if it were! For it is a solid, heavy, handsome door, and must once have been in the habit of shutting with a sonorous bang behind a liveried lackey, who had just seen his master and mistress off the grounds in a carriage and pair.

But at present one might fancy the house in the early stage of a chancery suit, and that the fruit from that grand double row of walnut trees on the right hand of the enclosure would fall and rot among the grass, if it were not that we heard the booming bark of dogs echoing from great buildings at the back. And now the half-weaned calves that have been sheltering themselves in a gorse-built hovel against the left-hand wall, come out and set up a silly answer to that terrible bark, doubtless supposing that it has reference to buckets of milk.

Yes, the house must be inhabited, and we will see by whom ; for imagination is a licensed trespasser : it has no fear ()f dnirs, but may climb over

ADAM BEDE. 129

walls and peep in at windows with inipunity. Put your face to one of the glass panes in the righthand window : what do you see ? A large open fireplace, with rusty dogs in it, and a bare-boarded floor ; at the

far end fleeces of wool stacked up ; in the middle of the floor some empty corn-bags. That is the furniture of the dining-room. And what through the left-hand window ? Several clotheshorses, a pillion, a spinning-wheel, and an old box wide open, and stuffed full of coloured rags. At the edge of this box there lies a great wooden doll, which, so far as mutilation is concerned, bears a strong resemblance to the finest Greek sculpture, and especially in the total loss of its nose. Near it there is a little chair, and the butt-end of a boy's leather long-lashed whip.

The history of the house is plain now. It was once the residence of a country squire, whose family, probably dwindling down to mere spinsterhood, got merged in the more territorial name of Donnithome. It was once the Hall; it is now the Hall Farm. Like the life in some coast-town that was once a watering-place, and is now a port, where the genteel streets are silent and grass-grown, and the docks and warehouses busy and resonant, the life at

VOL. I. 1

130 ADAM BEDE.

the Hall has changed its focus, and no longer radiates from the parlour, but from the kitchen and the farmyard.

Plenty of life there! though this is the drowsiest time of the year, just before hay-harvest; and it is the drowsiest time of the day too, for it is close upon three by the sun, and it is half-past three by Mrs Poyser's handsome eight-day clock. But there is always a stronger sense of life when the sun is brilliant after rain ; and now he is pouring down his beams, and making sparkles among the wet straw, and lighting up every patch of vivid green moss on the red tiles of the cow-shed, and turning even the muddy water that is hurrying along the channel to the drain into a mirror for the yellow-billed ducks, who are seizing the opportunity of getting a drink with as much body in it as possible. There is quite a concert of noises : the great bull-dog, chained against the stables, is thrown into furious exasperation by the unwary approach of a cock too near the mouth of his kennel, and

sends forth a thundering bark, which is answered by two fox-hounds shut up in the opposite cowhouse ; the old top-knotted hens scratching with their chicks among the straw, set up a sympathetic croaking as the discomfited cock joins them ; a sow

ADAM BEDE. 131

with her brood, all very muddy as to the legs, and curled as to the tail, throws in some deep staccato notes ; oui' friends the calves are bleating from the home croft; and, under all, a fine ear discerns the continuous hum of human voices.

For the great barn-doors are thrown wide open, and men are busy there mending the harness, under the superintendence of Mr Goby the "whittaw," otherwise saddler, who entertains them with the latest Treddleston gossip. It is certainly rather an unfortunate day that Alick, the shepherd, has chosen for having the whittaws, since the morning turned out so wet; and Mrs Poyser has spoken her mind pretty strongly as to the dirt which the extra number of men's shoes brought into the house at dinnertime. Indeed, she has not yet recovered her equanimity on the subject, though it is now nearly three hours since dinner, and the house-floor is perfectly clean again ; as clean as everything else in that wonderful house-place, where the only chance of collecting a few grains of dust would be to climb on the salt-coffer, and put yom[^] finger on the high mantel-shelf on which the glittering brass candlesticks are enjoying their summer sinecure; for at this time of year, of course, every one goes to bed while it is yet light, or at least light enough to dis

13*2 ADAM BEDE.

cern the outline of objects after you have bruised your shins against them. Surely nowhere else could an oak clock-case and an oak-table have got to such a polish by the hand : genuine " elbow polish," as Mrs Poyser called it, for she thanked God she never had any of your varnished rubbish in her house. Hetty Sorrel often took the opportunity, when her aunt's back was turned, of looking at the pleasing reflection of herself in those polished surfaces, for the oak-

table was usually turned up like a screen, and was more for ornament than for use ; and she could see herself sometimes in the great round pewter dishes that were ranged on the shelves above the long deal dinner-table, or in the hobs of the grate, which always shone like jasper.

Everything was looking at its brightest at this moment, for the sun shone right on the pewter dishes, and from their reflecting surfaces pleasant jets of light were thro^vn on mellow oak and bright brass ;— and on a still pleasanter object than these ; for some of the rays fell on Dinah's finely-moulded cheek, and lit up her pale red hair to auburn, as she bent over the heavy household linen which she was mending for her aunt. No scene could have been more peaceful, if Mrs Poyser, who was ironing a few

ADAM BEDE. 133

things that still remained from the Monday's wash, had not been making a frequent clinking with her iron, and moving to and fro whenever she wanted it to cool; carrying the keen glance of her blue-grey eye from the kitchen to the dairy, where Hetty was making up the butter, and from the dairy to the back-kitchen, where Nancy was taking the pies out of the oven. Do not suppose, however, that Mrs Poyser was elderly or shrewish in her appearance ; she was a good-looking woman, not more than eightand-thirty, of fair complexion and sandy hair, wellshapen, light-footed : the most conspicuous article in her attii^e was an ample checkered linen apron, which almost covered her skirt; and nothing could be plainer or less noticeable than her cap and gown, for there was no weakness of which she was less tolerant than feminine vanity, and the preference of ornament to utility. The family likeness between her and her niece, Dinah ^lorris, with the contrast between her keenness and Dinah's seraphic gentleness of expression, might have served a painter as an excellent suggestion for a IMartha and Mary. Their eyes were just of the same colour, but a striking test of the difference in their operation was seen in the demeanour of Trip, the black and tan terrier,

134 ADAM BEDE.

whenever that much-suspected dog unwarily exposed himself to the freezing arctic ray of Mrs Poyser's glance. Her tongue was not less keen than her eye, and, whenever a damsel came within ear-shot, seemed to take up an unfinished lecture, as a barrelorgan takes up a tune, precisely at the point where it had left off.

The fact that it was churning-day was another reason why it was inconvenient to have the "whittaws," and why, consequently, Mrs Poyser should scold Molly the housemaid with unusual severity. To all appearance Molly had got through her afterdinner work in an exemplary manner, had "cleaned herself" with great despatch, and now came to ask, submissively, if she should sit down to her spinning till milking-time. But this blameless conduct, according to Mrs Poyser, shrouded a secret indulgence of unbecoming wishes, which she now dragoed forth and held up to Molly's view with cutting eloquence.

"Spinning, indeed! It isn't spinning as you'd be at, 111 be bound, and let you have your own way. I never knew your equals for gallowsness. To think of a gell o' your age wanting to go and sit with half-a-dozen men! I'd ha' been ashamed to let the words]pass over my lips if I'd been you.

ADAM BEPE. 1 .*>;■)

Aiid you, as have been here ever since last Michaelmas, and I hired you at Treddles'on stattits, without a bit o' character—as I say, you might be grateful to be hired in that way to a respectable place; and you knew no more o' what belongs to work when you come here than the mawkin i' the field. As poor a two-fisted thing as ever I saw, you know you was. Who taught you to scrub a floor, I should like to know? Why, you'd leave the dirt in heaps i' the corners—anybody 'ud think you'd never been brought up among Christians. And as for spinning, why, you've wasted as much as your wage i' the flax you've spoiled learning to spin. And you've a right to feel that, and not to go about as gaping and as thoughtless as if you was beholding to nobody. Comb the wool for the whittaws, indeed! That's what you'd like to be doing, is it? That's the way with you—that's the road you'd

all like to go, headlongs to ruin. You're never easy till you've got some sweetheart as is as big a fool as yourself: you think you'll be finely off" when you're married, I daresay, and have got a three-legged stool to sit on, and never a blanket to cover you, and a bit o' oatcake for your dinner, as three children are a-snatching at."

" I'm sure I donna want t' go wi' the whittaws,"

136 ADAM BEDE.

said Molly, wliimpering, and quite overcome by this Dantean picture of her future, " on'y we allays used to comb the wool for 'n at Mester Ottley's; an' so I just axed ye. I donna want to set eyes on the whittaws again ; I wish I may never stir if I do."

" Mr Ottley's, indeed ! It's fine talking o' what you did at Mr Ottley's. Your missis there might like her floors dirtied wi' whittaws, for what I know. There's no knowing what people wanna like—such ways as I've heard of! I never had a gell come into my house as seemed to know what cleaning was ; I tliink people live like pigs, for my part. And as to that Betty as was dairymaid at Trent's before she come to me, she'd ha' left the cheeses without turning from week's end to w^eek's end, and the dairy thralls, I might ha' wrote my name on 'em, when I come down-stairs after my illness, as the doctor said it was inflammation—it was a mercy I got well of it. And to think o' your knowing no better, Molly, and been here a-going i' nine months, and not for want o' talking to, neither—and what are your stanning there for, like a jack as is run doTVTi, istancead o' getting your wheel out? You're a rare un' for

ADAM BEDE. 137

sitting down to your work a little while after it's time to put by/'

" Munny, my iron's t^vite told; pease put it down to warm."

The small chirruping voice that uttered this request came from a little sunny-haired girl between three and four, who, seated on a high

chair at the end of the ironing-table, was arduously clutching the handle of a miniature iron with her tiny fat fist, and ironing rags with an assiduity that required her to put her little red tongue out as far as anatomy would allow.

" Cold, is it, my darling ? Bless your sweet face !" said J\li's Poyser, who was remarkable for the facility with which she could relapse from her official objurgatory tone to one of fondness or of friendly converse. " Never mind ! Mother's done her ironing now. She's going to put the ironing things away."

"Munny, I tould 'ike to do into de barn to Tommy, to see de whittawd."

" No, no, no ; Totty ud get her feet wet," said Mrs Poyser, carrying away her iron. "Run into the dairy, and see cousin Hetty make the butter."

" I tould lke a bit o' pum-take," rejoined Totty, who seemed to be provided with several relays of

138 ADAM BEDE.

requests ; at the same time, taking the opportunity of lier momentary leisure, to put her fingers into a bowl of starch, and drag it down, so as to empty the contents with tolerable completeness on to the ironing-sheet.

" Did ever anybody see the like ?" screamed Mrs Poyser, running towards the table when her eye had fallen on the blue stream. " The child's allays i' mischief if your back's turned a minute. What shall I do to you, you naughty, naughty gell! "

Totty, however, had descended from her chair with great swiftness, and was already in retreat towards the dairy, with a sort of waddling run, and an amount of fat on the nape of her neck, which made her look like the metamorphosis of a white sucking-pig.

The starch having been wiped up by Molly's help, and the ironing apparatus put by, Mrs Poyser took up her knitting, which always lay ready at hand, and was the work she liked best, because she could carry it on automatically as she walked to and fro. But now she came and sat down opposite Dinah, whom she looked at in a meditative way, as she knitted her grey worsted stocking.

" You look th' image o' your aunt Judith, Dinah,

ADAM BEDE. 139

when you sit a-sewing. I could almost fancy it was thii'ty years back, and I was a little gell at home, looking at Judith as she sat at her work, after she'd done th' house up ; only it was a little cottage, father's was, and not a big rambling house as gets dirty i' one corner as fast as you clean it in another ; but for all that, I could fancy you was your aunt Judith, only her hair was a deal darker than yours, and she was stouter and brpader i' the shoulders. Judith and me allays hung together, though she had such queer ways, but your mother and her never could agree. All ! your mother little thought as she'd have a daughter just cut out after the very pattern o' Judith, and leave her an orphan, too, for Judith to take care on, and bring up with a spoon when she was in the graveyard at Stoniton. I allays said that o' Judith, as she'd bear a pound weight any day, to save anybody else caiTying a ounce. And she was just the same from the first o' my remembering her; it made no difference in her, as I could see, when she took to the Methodists, only she talked a bit different, and wore a different sort o' cap ; but she'd never in her life spent a penny on herself more than keeping herself decent."

" She was a blessed woman," said Dinah ; " God

had given her a loving, self-forgetting nature, and he perfected it by grace. And she was very fond of you too, Aunt Rachel. I've often heard her talk of you in the same sort of way. When she had that bad illness, and I was only eleven years old, she used to say, ' You'll have a friend on earth in your Aunt Rachel, if I'm taken from you; for she has a kind heart;' and I'm sure I've found it so."

" I don't know how, child; anybody 'ud be cunning to do anything for you, I think; you're like the birds o' th' air, and live nobody knows how. I'd ha' been glad to behave to you like a mother's sister; if you'd come and live i' this country, where there's some shelter and victual for man and beast, and folks don't live on the naked hills, like poultry a-scratching on a gravel bank. And then you might get married to some decent man, and there'd be plenty ready to have you, if you'd only leave off that preaching, as is ten times worse than anything your aunt Judith ever did. And even if you'd marry Seth Bede, as is a poor wool-gathering Methodist, and's never like to have a penny beforehand, I know your uncle 'ud help you with a pig, and very like a cow, for he's allays been good-natur'd to my kin, for all they're poor, and made 'em welcome to th' house ;

ADAM BEDE. UI

and 'ud do for you, I'll be bound, as much as ever he'd do for Hetty, though she's his own niece. And there's linen in the house as I could well spare you, for I've got lots o' sheeting, and table-clothing, and towelling, as isn't made up. There's a piece o' sheeting I could give you as that squinting Kitty spun—she was a rare girl to spin, for all she squinted, and the children couldn't abide her ; and, you know, the spinning's going on constant, and there's new linen wove twice as fast as th' old wears out. But where's the use o' talking, if you wanna be persuaded, and settle down like any other woman in her senses, instead o' wearing yourseK out with walking and preaching, and giving away every penny you get, so as you've nothing saved against sickness ; and all the things you've got i' the world, I verily believe, 'ud go into a bundle no bigger nor a double cheese. And all because you've got notions i' your head about religion more nor what's i' the Catechism and the Prayer-book."

" But not more than what's in the Bible, aunt," said Dinah.

" Yes, and the Bible too, for that matter," Mrs Poyser rejoined, rather sharply; "else why shouldn't them as know best what's in the Bible—the parsons

142 ADAM BEDE.

and people as have got nothing to do but learn it—do the same as you do ? But, for the matter o' that, if everybody was to do like you, the world must come to a standstill; for if everybody tried to do without house and home, and with poor eating and drinking, and was allays talking as we must despise the things o' the world, as you say, I should like to know where the pick o' the stock, and the com, and the best new milk cheeses 'ud have to go. Everybody 'ud be wanting bread made o' tail ends, and everybody 'ud be running after everybody else to preach to 'em, istancead o' bringing up their families, and laying by against a bad harvest. It stands to sense as that can't be the right religion."

" Nay, dear aunt, you never heard me say that all people are called to forsake their work and their families. It's quite right the land should be ploughed and sowed, and the precious corn stored, and the things of this life cared for, and right that people should rejoice in their families, and provide for them, so that this is done in the fear of the Lord, and that they are not unmindful of the soul's wants while they are caring for the body. We can all be servants of God wherever our lot is cast, but he i^ives us different sorts of work, accordins^ as he

ADAM BEDK. 113

fits US for it aiid calls us to it. I can no more help spending my life in tiying to do what I can for the souls of others, than you could help running if you heard little Totty crpng at the other end of the house ; the voice would go to your heart, you would think the dear child was in trouble or in danger, and you couldn't rest without running to help her and comfort her/"

" Ah/" said]\Mrs Poyser, rising and walking towards the door, " I know it 'ud be just the same if I was to talk to you for hours. You'd make me the same answer at tli' end. I might as well talk to the running brook, and tell it to stan' still."

The causeway outside the kitchen door was dry enough now for]Mrs Poyser to stand there quite pleasantly and see what was going on in the yard, the grey worsted stocking making a steady progress in her hands all the while. But she had not been standing there more than five minutes before she came in again and said to Dinah in rather a flurried, awe-stricken tone,

" If there isn't Captain Donnithorne and Mr Irwine a-coming into the yard! I'll lay my life they're come to speak about your preaching on the Green, Dinah ; it's vou must answer 'em, for I'm

144 ADAJVI BEDE.

dumb. I've said enough a'ready about your bringing such disgrace upo' your uncle's family. I wouldn't ha' minded if you'd been Mr Poyser's own niece—folks must put up wi' their own kin, as they put up wi' their own noses—it's their own flesh and blood. But to think of a niece o' mine being cause o' my husband's being turned out of his farm, and me brought him no fortin but my savins "

" Nay, dear aunt Eachel," said Dinah gently, " you've no cause for such fears. I've strong assurance that no evil will happen to you and my uncle and the children from anything I've done. I didn't preach without direction."

" Direction 1 I know very well what you mean by direction," said Mrs Poyser, knitting in a rapid and agitated manner. " When there's a bigger maggot than usial in your head you call it ' direction ;' and then nothing can stir you—you look like the statty o' the outside o' Treddles'on church, a-starin' and a-smilin' whether it's fair weather or foul. I hanna common patience with you."

By this time the two gentlemen had reached the palings, and had got down from their horses: it was plain they meant to come in. Mrs Poyser advanced

ADAM BEDE. 145

to the door to meet them, curtsying low, and trembling between anger with Dinah and anxiety to conduct herself with perfect propriety on the occasion. For in those days the keenest of bucolic minds felt a whispering awe at the sight of the gentry, such as of Old men felt when they stood on tip-toe to watch the gods passing by in tall human shape.

" Well, Mrs Poyser, how are you after this stormy morning?" said Mr Irwine, with his stately cordiality. " Our feet are quite dry ; we shall not soil your beautiful floor."

" O, sir, don't mention it," said Mrs Poyser " Will you and the Captain please to walk into the parlour ?" I

" No, indeed, thank you, Mrs Poyser," said the Captain, looking eagerly round the kitchen, as if his eye were seeking something it could not find. " I delight in your kitchen, I think it is the most charming room I know. I should like every farmer's wife to come and look at it for a pattern."

" O, you're pleased to say so, sir. Pray take a seat," said Mrs Poyser, relieved a little by this compliment and the Captain's evident good-humour, but still glancing anxiously at Mr Irwine, who, she saw, was lookinn[^] at Dinah and advancino[^] towards her.

VOL. I. K

146 ADAM BEDE.

"Poyser is not at home, is he?" said Captain Donnitliorne, seating himself where he could see along the short, passage to the open dairy-door.

" No, sir, he isn't; he's gone to Rosseter to see Mr West, the factor, about the wool. But there's father i' the barn, sir, if he'd be of any use."

" No, thank you ; I'll just look at the whelps and leave a message about them with your shepherd. I must come another day and see your husband; I want to have a consultation with him about horses. Do you know when he's likely to be at liberty ?"

" Why, sir, you can hardly miss him, except it's o' Treddles'on market-day—that's of a Friday, you know. For if he's anywhere on the farm we can send for him in a minute. If we'd got rid o' the Scantlands we should have no outlying fields ; and I should be glad of it, for if ever anything happens he's sure to be gone to the Scantlands. Things allays happen so contrary, if they've a chance ; and it's an unnat'ral thing to have one bit o' your farm in one county and all the rest in another."

" All, the Scantlands would go much better with Choyce's farm, especially as he w^ants dairy-land and you've got plenty. I think yours is the prettiest farm on the estate, though ; and do you know,

ADAM BEDE. 147

Mrs Poyser, if I were going to marry and settle I should be tempted to turn you out, and do up this fine old house, and turn farmer myself

" O, sir/' said ^Irs Poyser, rather alarmed, " you wouldn't like it at all. As for farming, it's putting money into your pocket wi' your right hand and fetching it out wi' your left. As fur as I can see, it's raising victual for other folks, and just getting a mouthful for yourself and your children as you go along. Not as you'd be like a poor man as wants to get his bread : you could afford to lose as much money as you liked i' farming; but it's poor fun, losing money, I should think, though I understan' it's what the great folks i' London play at more than anything. For my husband heard at market as Lord Dacey's eldest son had lost thousands upo' thousands to the Prince o' Wales, and they said my lady was going to pawn her jewels to pay for him. But you know more about that than I do, sir. But as for farming, sir, I canna think as you'd like it; and this house—the draughts in it are enough to cut you through, and its my opinion the floors up-stairs are very rotten, and the rats i' the cellar are beyond anything."

"WTiy, that's a terrible picture, Mrs Poyser. I

148 ADAM BEDE.

think I should be doing you a service to turn you out of such a place. But there's no chance of that. I'm not likely to settle for the next twenty years, till I'm a stout gentleman of forty ; and my grandfather would never consent to part with such good tenants as you."

"Well, sir, if he tlunks so well o' Mr Poyser for a tenant, I wish you could put in a word for him to allow us some new gates for the Five closes, for my husband's been asking and asking till he's tired, and to think o' what he's done for the farm, and's never had a penny allowed him, be the times bad or good. And as I ve said to my husband, often and often, Tm sure if the Captain had anything to do wdth it, it wouldn't be so. Not as I wish to speak disrespectful o' them as have got the power i' their hands, but it's more than flesh and blood 'ull bear sometimes, to be toiling and striving, and up early and down late, and hardly sleeping a wink when you lie down for thinking as the cheese may swell, or the cows may slip their calf, or the wheat may grow green again i' the sheaf—and after all, at th' end o' the year, it's like as if you'd been cooking a feast and had got the smell of it for your pains."

ADAM BEDE. 149

Mrs Peyser, once launched into conversation, always sailed along without any check from her preliminary awe of the gentry. The confidence she felt in her own powers of exposition was a motive force that overcame all resistance.

" I'm afraid I should only do harm instead of good, if I were to speak about the gates, Mrs Poyser," said the Captain, " though I assure you there's no man on the estate I would sooner say a word for than your husband. I know his farm is in better order than any other within ten miles of us ; and as for the kitchen," he added, smiling, " I don't believe there's one in the kingdom to beat it. By the by, I've never seen your dairy : I must see your dairy, j\Mrs Poyser."

" Indeed, sir, it's not fit for you to go in, for Hetty's in the middle o' making the butter, for the churning was thrown late, and I m quite ashamed/' This Mrs Poyser said blushing, and believing that the Captain was really interested in her milk-pans, and would adjust his opinion of her to the appearance of her dairy.

" O, I've no doubt it's in capital order. Take me in," said the Captain, himself leading the way. while Mrs Poyser followed.

CHAPTEE VII.

THE DAIEY.

The dairy was certainly worth looking at: it was a scene to sicken for with a sort of calenture in hot and dusty streets—such coolness, such purity, such fresh fragrance of new-pressed cheese, of firm butter, of wooden vessels perpetually bathed in pure water ; such soft colouring of red earthenware and creamy surfaces, brown wood and polished tin, grey limestone and rich orange-red rust on the iron weights and hooks and hinges. But one gets only a confused notion of these details when they surround a distractingly pretty gii4 of seventeen, standing on little pattens and rounding her dimpled arm to lift a pound of butter out of the scale.

Hetty blushed a deep rose-colour when Captain Donnithorne entered the dairy and spoke to her; but it was not at all a distressed blush, for it was inwreathed with smiles and dimples, and with

ADAM BEDE. 151

sparkles from under long curled dark eye-lashes; and while her aunt was discoursins[^] to him about the limited amount of milk that was to be spared for butter and cheese so long as the calves were not all weaned, and the large quantity but inferior quality of milk yielded by the short-horn, which had been bought on experiment, together witli other matters which must be interesting to a young gentleman who would one day be a landlord, Hetty tossed and patted her pound of

butter with quite a self-possessed, coquettish air, slyly conscious that no turn of her head was lost.

There are various orders of beauty, causing men to make fools of themselves in various styles, from the desperate to the sheepish; but there is one order of beauty which seems made to turn the heads not only of men, but of all intelligent mammals, even of women. It is a beauty like that of kittens, or very small downy ducks making gentle rippling noises with their soft bills, or babies just beginning to toddle and to engage in conscious mischief—a beauty with which you can never be angry, but that you feel ready to crush for inability to comprehend the state of mind into which it throws you. Hetty Sorrel's was that sort of beauty.

152 ADAM BEDE.

Her aunt, Mrs Poyser, who professed to despise all personal attractions and intended to be the severest of mentors, continually gazed at Hetty's charms by the sly, fascinated in spite of herself; and after administering such a scolding as naturally flowed from her anxiety to do well by her husband's niece—who had no mother of her own to scold her, poor thing!—she would often confess to her husband, when they were safe out of hearing, that she firmly believed, " the naughtier the little huzzy behaved, the prettier she looked."

It is of little use for me to tell you that Hetty's cheek was like a rose-petal, that dimples played about her pouting lips, that her large dark eyes hid a soft roguishness under their long lashes, and that her curly hair, though all pushed back under her round cap while she was at work, stole back in dark delicate rings on her forehead, and about her white shell-like ears ; it is of little use for me to say how lovely was the contour of her pink and white neckerchief, tucked into her low plum-coloured stuff boddice, or how the linen butter-making apron, with its bib, seemed a thing to be imitated in silk by duchesses, since it fell in such charming lines, or how her brown stockings and thick-soled buckled shoes

ADAM BEDE. 153

lost all that clumsiness which they must certainly have had when empty of her foot and ankle;—of little use, unless you have seen a woman who affected you as Hetty affected her beholders, for otherwise, though you might conjure up the image of a lovely woman, she would not in the least resemble that distractino' kitten-like maiden. I mio-ht mention all the divine charms of a bright spring day, but if you had never in your life utterly forgotten yourself in straining your eyes after the mounting lark, or in wanderinor throuQ;h the still lanes when the freshopened blossoms j&ll them with a sacred, silent beauty like that of fretted aisles, where would be the use of my descriptive catalogue ? I could never make you know what I meant by a bright spring day. Hetty's was a springtide beauty ; it was the beauty of young frisking things, round-limbed, gambolling, circumventing you by a false air of innocence —the innocence of a yoimg star-browed calf, for example, that, being inclined for a promenade out of bounds, leads you a severe steeple-chase over hedge and ditch, and only comes to a stand in the middle of a bog.

And they are the prettiest attitudes and movements into which a pretty girl is thrown in making

154 ADAM BEDE.

up butter—tossing movements that give a charming curve to the arm, and a sideward inclination of the round white neck ; little patting and rolling movements vnth the palm of the hand, and nice adaptations and finishings which cannot at all be effected without a gi^eat play of the pouting mouth and the dark eyes. And then the butter itself seems to communicate a fi^esh charm—it is so pui^e, so sweetscented ; it is turned off the mould with such a beautiful firm surface, like marble in a pale yellow light! Moreover, Hetty was particularly clever at making up the butter ; it was the one performance of hers that her aunt allowed to pass without severe criticism ; so she handled it with ail the grace that belongs to mastery.

" I hope you will be ready for a great holiday on the thirtieth of July, Mrs Poyser," said Captain Donnithorne, when he had sufficiently admired the dairy, and given several improvised opinions on Swede turnips and shorthorns. " You know what is to happen then, and I shall expect you to be one of the guests who come earliest and leave latest. Will you promise me your hand for two dances. Miss Hetty ? If I don't get your promise now, I know I shall hardly have a chance, for all

ADAM BEDE. 155

the smart young farmers will take care to secure you."

Hetty smiled and blushed, but before she could answer, Mrs Poyser interposed, scandalised at the mere suggestion that the young squire could be excluded by any meaner partners.

" Indeed, sir, you're very kind to take that notice of her. And I'm sure whenever you're pleased to dance with her, she'll be proud and thankful, if she stood stni all the rest o' th' evening!"

" O no, no, that would be too cruel to all the other young fellows who can dance. But you will promise me two dances, won't you ?" the Captain continued, determined to make Hetty look at him and speak to him.

Hetty dropped the prettiest little curtsy, and stole a half-shy, half-coquettish glance at him as she said,

" Yes, thank you, sir."

" And you must bring all your children, you know, Mrs Poyser; your little Totty, as well as the boys. I want all the youngest children on the estate to be there—all those who will be fine young men and women when I'm a bald old fellow."

" O dear sir, that 'ull be a long time first," said

Mrs Poyscr, quite overcome at the young squire's speaking so lightly of himself, and thinking how her husband would be interested in hearing her recount this remarkable specimen of high-born humour. The Captain was thought to be "very full of his jokes" and was a great favourite throughout the estate on account of his free manners. Every tenant was quite sure things would be different when the reins got into his hands—there was to be a millennial abundance of new gates, allowances of lime, and returns of ten per cent.

"But where is Totty to-day?" he said. "I want to see her."

"Where is the little un, Hetty?" said Mrs Poyser. "She came in here not long ago."

"I don't know. She went into the brewhouse to Nancy, I think."

The proud mother, unable to resist the temptation to show her Totty, passed at once into the back kitchen, in search of her, not, however, without misgivings lest something should have happened to render her person and attire unfit for presentation.

"And do you carry the butter to market when you've made it?" said the Captain to Hetty, meanwhile.

O<

"O no, sir; not when it's so heavy; I'm not strong enough to carry it. Alick takes it on horseback"

"No, I'm sure your pretty arms were never meant for such heavy weights. But you go out a walk sometimes these pleasant evenings, don't you? Truly don't you have a walk in the Chase sometimes, now it's so green and pleasant? I hardly ever see you anywhere except at home and at church."

"Aunt doesn't like me to go away only when I'm going somewhere," said Hetty. "But I go through the Chase sometimes."

"And don't you ever go to see Mrs Best, the housekeeper ? I think I saw you once in the housekeeper's room."

" It isn't :Mrs Best, it's Mrs Pomfret, the lady'smaid, as I go to see. She's teaching me tent-stitch and the lace-mending. I'm going to tea with her to-morrow afternoon."

The reason why there had been space for this tete-a-tete can only be known by looking into the back-kitchen, where Totty had been discovered rubbing a stray blue-bag against her nose, and in the same moment allowing some liberal indigo drops to fall on her afternoon pinafore. But now she

158 ADAM BEDE.

appeared holding her mother's hand—the end of her round nose rather shiny from a recent and hurried application of soap and water.

" Here she is ! " said the Captain, lifting her up and setting her on the low stone shelf " Here's Totty ! By the by, what's her other name ? She wasn't christened Totty."

" O sir, we call her sadly out of her name. Charlotte's her christened name. It's a name in Mr Poyser's family: his grandmother was named Charlotte. But we began with calling her Lotty, and now it's got to Totty. To be sure it's more like a name for a dog than a Christian child."

" Totty's a capital name. "Why, she looks like a Totty. Has she got a pocket on ?" said the Captain, feeling in his own waistcoat pockets.

Totty immediately with great gravity lifted up her frock, and showed a tiny pink pocket at present in a state of collapse.

" It dot notin in it," she said, as she looked down at it very earnestly.

" No ! what a pity ! such a pretty pocket. Well, I think I've got some things in mine that will make a pretty jingle in it. Yes ! I declare I've

got five little round silver things, and hear what a pretty

ADAM BEDE. 109

noise they make in Totty's pink pocket." Here he shook the pocket with the five sixpences in it, and Totty showed her teeth and wrinkled her nose in great glee ; but divining that there was nothing more to be got by staying, she jumped off the shelf and ran away to jingle her pocket in the hearing of Nancy, while her mother called after her, " O for shame, you naughty gell I not to thank the Captain for what he's given you. I'm sure, sir, it's very kind of you ; but she's spoiled shameful; her father won't have her said nay in anything, and there's no managing her. It's being the youngest, and th' only gell."

" O, she's a funny little fatty; I wouldn't have her different. But I must be going now, for I suppose the Rector is waiting for me."

"With a "good-by," a bright glance, and a bow to Hetty, Arthur left the dairy. But he was mistaken in himself waited for. The Rector had been so much interested in his conversation with Dinah, that he would not have chosen to close it earlier; and you shall hear now what they had been saying to each other.

CHAPTER VIII.

A VOCATION.

DIXAH, who had risen when the gentlemen came in, but still kept hold of the sheet she was mending, curtsied respectfully when she saw Mr Irwine looking at her and advancing towards her. He had never yet spoken to her, or stood face to face with her, and her first thought, as her eyes met his, was, " What a well-favoured countenance ! O that the good seed might fall on that soil, for it would surely flourish. The agreeable impression must have been mutual, for Mr Irwine bowed to her with a benignant deference, which would have been equally in place if she had been the most dignified lady of his acquaintance.

" You are only a visitor in this neighbourhood, I think ?" were his first words, as he seated himself opposite to her.

" No, sir, I come from Snowfield, in Stonyshire.

ADAM BEDE. IGI

But my aunt was very kind, wanting nie t<j liave rest from my work there, because I'd been ill, and she invited me to come and stay with her for a while."

" Ah, I remember Snowfield very well ; I once had occasion to go there. It's a dreary, bleak place. They were building a cotton-mill there ; but that's many years ago now : I suppose the place is a good deal changed by the employment that mill must have brought."

" It is chano-ed so far as the mill has brouf^ht people there, who get a livelihood for themselves by working in it, and make it better for the tradesfolks. I work in it myself, and have reason to be grateful, for thereby I have enough and to spare. But it's still a bleak place, as you say, sir — very different from this country."

" You have relations living there probably, so that you are attached to the place as your home ?"

" I had an aunt there once ; she brought me u}), for I was an orphan. But she was taken away seven years ago, and I have no other kindred that I know of, besides my aunt Poyser, who is very good to me, and would liave me come and live in this country, which to be .sure is a good land, wherein they eat bread \without scarceness. But

VOL. I. I.

162 ADAM BEDE.

I'm not free to leave Snowfield, where I was first planted, and have grown deep into it, like the small grass on the hill-top."

" Ah, I daresay you have many religious friends and companions there ; you are a Methodist—a Wesleyan, I think ?"

" Yes, my aunt at Snowfield belonged to the Society, and I have cause to be thankful for the privileges I have had thereby from my earliest childhood."

*' And have you been long in the habit of preaching?—for I understand you preached at Hayslope last night."

" I first took to the work four years since, when I was twenty-one."

" Your Society sanctions women's preaching, then?"

" It doesn't forbid them, sir, when they've a clear call to the work, and when their ministry is owned by the conversion of sinners, and the strengthening of God's people. Mrs Fletcher, as you may have heard about, was the first woman to preach in the Society, I believe, before she was married, when she was Miss Bosanquet; and Mr Wesley approved of her undertaking the work. She had a great gift."

ADAM BEDE. 163

and there are many others now living who are precious fellow-helpers in the work of the ministry. I understand there's been voices raised against it in the Society of late, but I cannot but think their counsel will come to nought. It isn't for men to make channels for God's Spirit, as they make channels for the water-courses, and say, 'Flow here, but flow not there.' "

" But don't you find some danger among your people—I don't mean to say that it is so with you, far from it—but don't you find sometimes that both men and women fancy themselves channels for God's Spirit, and are quite mistaken, so that they set about a work for which they are unfit, and bring holy things into contempt ?"

" Doubtless it is so sometimes ; for there have been evil-doers among us who have sought to deceive the brethren, and some

there are who deceive their own selves. But we are not without discipline and correction to put a check upon these things. There's a very strict order kept among us, and the brethren and sisters watch for each other's souls as they that must give account. They don't go every one his own way and say, ' Am I my brother's keeper ?' "

1G4 ADAM BEDE.

" But tell me—if I may ask, and I am really interested in knowing it—how you first came to think of preaching ?"

" Indeed, sir, I didn't think of it at all—I'd been used from the time I was sixteen to talk to the little children and teach them, and sometimes I had had my heart enlarged to speak in class, and was much drawn out in prayer with the sick. But I had felt no call to preach ; for when I'm not greatly wrought upon, I'm too much given to sit still and keep by myself: it seems as if I could sit silent all day long with the thought of God overflowing my soul—as the pebbles lie bathed in the WiUow Brook. For thoughts are so great—aren't they, sir? They seem to lie upon us like a deep flood ; and it's my besetment to forget where I am and everything about me, and lose myself in thoughts that I could give no account of, for I could neither make a beginning nor ending of them in words. That was my way as long as I can remember; but sometimes it seemed as if speech came to me without any will of my own, and words were given to me that came out as the tears come, because our hearts are full and we can't help it. And those were always times of gi^eat blessing, though I had never thought it could be so

ADAM BEDE. 165

with me before a congregation of people. But, sir, we are led on, like the little children, by a way that we know not. I was called to preach quite suddenly, and since then I have never been left in doubt about the work that was laid upon me/"

" But tell me the circum.stances—just how it was, the very day you began to preach."

"It was one Sunday I walked with brother Marlowe, who was an aged man, one of the local preachers, all the way to Hetton-Deeps—that's a village where the people get their living by working in the lead mines, and where there's no church nor preacher, but they live like sheep without a shepherd. It's better than twelve miles from Snowfield, so we set out early in the morning, for it was summer time; and I had a wonderful sense of the Divine love as we walked over the hills, where there's no trees, you know, sir, as there is here, to make the sky look smaller, but you see the heavens stretched out like a tent, and you feel the everlasting arms around you. But before we got to Hetton, brother Marlowe was seized with a dizziness that made him afraid of falling, for he overworked himself sadly, at his years, in watching and praying, and walking so many miles to speak the Word, as well as carrying on his trade

]G6 ADAM BEDE.

of linen-weaviug. And when we got to the village, the people were expecting him, for he'd appointed the time and the place when he was there before, and such of them as cared to hear the Word of Life were assembled on a spot where the cottages was thickest, so as others might be drawn to come. But he felt as he couldn't stand up to preach, and he was forced to lie doⁱⁱ in the first of the cottages we came to. So I went to tell the people, thinking we'd go into one of the houses, and I would read and pray with them. But as I passed along by the cottages and saw the aged trembling women at the doors, and the hard looks of the men, who seemed to have their eyes no more filled with the sight of the Sabbath morning than if they had been dumb oxen that never looked up to the sky, I felt a great movement in my soul, and I trembled as if I was shaken by a strong spirit entering into my weak body. And I went to where the little flock of people was gathered together, and stepped on the low wall that was built against the green hill-side, and I spoke the words that were given to me abundantly. And they all came round me out of all the cottages, and many wept over their sins, and have since been joined to the Lord. That was the beginning of my preaching, sir, and Tve preached ever since. '

ADAM JBEDE. 167

Dinah had let her work foil during this narrative, which she uttered in her usual simple way, but with that sincere, articulate, thrilling treble, by which she always mastered her audience. She stooped now to gather up her sewing, and then went on with it as before. Mr Irwine was deeply interested. He said to himself, " He must be a miserable prig who would act the pedagogue here : one might as well go and lecture the trees for growing in their own shape."

" And you never feel any embarrassment from the sense of your youth—that you are a lovely young woman on whose men's eyes are fixed ?" he said aloud.

" No, I've no room for such feelings, and I don't believe the people ever take notice about that. I think, sir, when God makes his presence felt through us, we are like the burning bush: Moses never took any heed what sort of bush it was—he only saw the brightness of the Lord. I've preached to as rough ignorant people as can be in the villages about Snowfield—men that look very hard and wild; but they never said an uncivil word to me, and often thanked me kindly as they made way for me to pass through the midst of them. "

" That I can believe—tJiat I can well believe,"

1(J8 ADAM liEDE.

said Mr Irwiiiie, emphatically. "And what did you think of your hearers last night, now ? Did you find them quiet and attentive ?"

" Very quiet, sir; but I saw no signs of any great work upon them, except in a young girl named Bessy Cranage, towards whom my heart yearned greatly, when mj eyes first fell on her bloomingyouth, given up to folly and vanity. I had some private talk and prayer with her afterwards, and I trust her heart is touched. But I've noticed, that in these villages where the people lead a quiet life among the gTeen pastures and the still waters, tilling the ground and tending the cattle, there's a strange deadness to the \yord, as difierent as can be from

the great towns, like Leeds, where I once went to visit a holy woman who preaches there. It's wonderful how rich is the harvest of souls up those high-walled streets, where you seem to walk as in a prison-yard, and the ear is deafened with the sounds of worldly toil. I think maybe it is because the promise is sweeter when this life is so dark and weary, and the soul gets more hungry when the body is ill at ease."

" Why, yes, our farmers are not easily roused. They take life almost as slowly as they

ADAM BEDE. Uj.9

sleep and cows. But we have some intelligent workmen about here. I daresay you know the Bedes ; Seth Bede, by the by, is a Methodist."

" Yes, I know Seth well, and his brother Adam a little. Seth is a gracious young man—sincere and without offence; and Adam is like the patriarch Joseph, for his great skill and knowledge, and the kindness he shows to his brother and his parents."

" Perhaps you don't know the trouble that has just happened to them ? Their father, Matthias Bede, was drowned in the Willow Brook last night, not far from his own door. I'm sorry now to see Adam."

" Ah, their poor aged mother ! " said Dinah, dropping her hands and looking before her with pitiful eyes, as if she saw the object of her sympathy. " She will mourn heavily ; for Seth has told me she's of an anxious, troubled heart. I must go and see if I can give her any help."

As she rose and was beginning to fold up her work. Captain Donnithorne, having exhausted all plausible pretexts for remaining among the milkpans, came out of the dairy, followed by Mrs Poyser. Mr li-wine now rose also, and, advancing towards Dinah, held out his hand, and said—

170 ADAM BEDE.

* Good-by. I hear you are going away soon ; but this will not be the last visit you will pay your aunt—so we shall meet again, I hope."

His cordiality towards Dinah set all Mrs Poyser s anxieties at rest, and her face was brighter than usual, as she said—

" I've never asked after Mrs Irwine and the Miss Irwines, sir ; I hope they're as well as usual."

"Yes, thank you, IVIrs Poyser, except that Miss Anne has one of her bad headaches to-day. By the by, we all liked that nice cream-cheese you sent us —my mother especially."

" I'm very glad, indeed, sir. It is but seldom I make one, but I remembered Mrs Ir[^]vine was fond of 'em. Please to give my duty to her, and to Miss Kate and Miss Anne. They've never been to look at my poultry this long while, and I've got some beautiful speckled chickens, black and white, as Miss Kate misiht like to have some of amonirst hers."

" Well, I'll tell her; she must come and see them. Good-by," said the Kector, mounting his horse.

" Just ride slowly on, li-wine," said Captain Donnithorne, mounting also. " I'll overtake you in three minutes. I'm only going to speak to the

ADAM BEDE. 171

shepherd about the whelps. Good-by, Mrs Poyser ; tell your husband I shall come and have a long talk with him soon."

Mrs Poyser curtsied duly, and watched the two horses until they had disappeared from the yard, amidst great excitement on the part of the pigs and the poultry, and under the furious indignation of the bulldog, who performed a PyiThic dance, that every moment seemed to

threaten the breaking of his chain.]Mrs Poyser delighted in this noisy exit; it was a fresh assurance to her that the farmyard was well guarded, and that no loiterers could enter unobserved ; and it was not until the gate had closed behind the Captain that she turned into the kitchen again, where Dinah stood with her bonnet in her hand, waiting to speak to her aunt, before she set out for Lisbeth Bede's cottage.

Mrs Poyser, however, though she noticed the bonnet, deferred remarking on it until she had disburthened herself of her surprise at Mr Irvine's behaviour.

" Why, Mr Irvine wasn't angry, then ? What did he say to you, Dinah? Didn't he scold you for preaching ?"

" No, he was not at all angry; he was very

172 ADAM BEDE.

friendly to me. I was quite drawn out to speak to him ; I hardly know how, for I had always thought of him as a worldly Sadducee. But his countenance is as pleasant as the morning sunshine/'

" Pleasant! and what else did y' expect to find him but pleasant?" said Mrs Poyser, impatiently, resuming her knitting. " I should think his countenance is pleasant indeed ! and him a gentleman born, and's got a mother like a picture. You may go the country round, and not find such another woman turned sixty-six. It's summat-like to see such a man as that i' the desk of a Sunday ! As I say to Poyser, it's like looking at a full crop o' wheat, or a pasture with a fine dairy o' cows in it; it makes you think the world's comfortable-like. But as for such creatures as you Methodisses run after, I'd as soon oo to look at a lot o' bare-ribbed runts on a common. Fine folks they are to tell you what's right, as look as if they'd never tasted nothing better than bacon-sword and sour-cake i' their lives. But what did Mr Irvine say to you about that fool's trick o' preaching on the Green ?"

" He only said he'd heard of it; he didn't seem to feel any disj[^]leasure about it. But, dear aunt, don't think any more about that. He told me some

ADAM BEDE. 173

thing tliat I'm sure will cause you sorrow, as it does me. Thias Bede was drowned last night in the Willow Brook, and I'm thinking that the aged mother [^]vill be greatly in need of comfort. Perhaps I can be of use to her, so I have fetched my bonnet and am p-omcr to set out."

" Dear heart, dear heart! But you must have a cup o' tea first, child," said Mrs Poyser, falling at once from the key of B with five sharps to the frank and genial C, " The kettle's boiling—we'll have it ready in a minute ; and the young uns 'ull be in and wanting theirs directly. I'm quite willing you should go and see th' old woman, for you're one as is allays welcome in trouble, Methodist or no Methodist ; but for the matter o' that, it's the flesh and blood folks are made on as makes the difference. Some cheeses are made o' skimmed milk and some o' new milk, and it's no matter what you call 'em, you may tell which is which by the look and the smell. But as to Thias Bede, he's better out o' the way nor in—God forgi' me for saying so—for he's done little this ten year but make trouble for them as belonged to him ; and I think it 'ud be well for you to take a little bottle o' rum for th' old woman, for I daresay she's got never a drop o' nothing to com

174 ADAM BEDE.

fort her inside. Sit down, child, and be easy, for you shan't stir out till you've had a cup o' tea, and so I tell you."

During the latter part of this speech, Mrs Poyser had been reaching: down the tea-thinos from the shelves, and was on her way towards the pantry for the loaf, followed close by Totty, who had made her appearance on the rattling of the tea-cups, when Hetty came out of the dairy relieving her tired arms by lifting them up, and clasping her hands at the back of her head.

" ^lolly," she said, rather languidly, "just run out and get me a bunch of dock-leaves : the butter s ready to pack up now."

" D' you hear what's happened, Hetty ?" said her aunt.

"No; how should I hear anything?" was the answer, in a pettish tone.

" Not as you'd care much, I daresay, if you did hear; for you're too feather-headed to mind if everybody was dead, so as you could stay up-stairs a-dressing yourself for two hours by the clock. But anybody besides yourself 'ud mind about such things happening to them as think a deal more of you than you deserve. But Adam Bede and all his kin might

ADAM BEDE. 175

be drowned for what you'd care—^you'd be perking at the glass the next minute."

" Adam Bede—drowned ?" said Hetty, letting her arms fall, and looking rather bewildered, but suspecting that her aunt was as usual exaggerating with a didactic purpose.

" No, my dear, no," said Dinah, kindly, for Mrs Poyser had passed on to the pantry without deigning more precise information. " Not Adam. Adam's father, the old man, is drowned. He was drowned last night in the Willow Brook. Mr Irwine has just told me about it."

" O, how dreadful! " said Hetty, looking serious, but not deeply affected ; and as Molly now entered with the dock-leaves, she took them silently and returned to the dairy without asking further questions.

CHAPTER IX.

HETTY S WORLD.

While she adjusted the broad leaves that set off' tlie pale fragrant butter as the primrose is set off" by its nest of green, I am afraid

Hetty was thinking a great deal more of the looks Captain Donnithorne had cast at her than of Adam and his troubles. Bright, admiring glances from a handsome younggentleman, with white hands, a gold chain, occasional regimentals, and wealth and grandeur immeasurable—those were the warm rays that set poor Hetty's heart vibrating, and playing its little foolish tunes over and over again. We do not hear that Memnon's statue gave forth its melody at all under the rushing of the mightiest wind, or in response to any other influence divine or human than certain short-lived sunbeams of morning; and we must learn to accommodate ourselves to the discovery that some of those cunningly-fashioned instruments

ADAM BEDE. 177

called human souls have only a very limited range of music, and will not vibrate in the least under a touch that fills others with tremulous rapture or quivering agony.

Hetty was quite used to the thought that people liked to look at her. She was not blind to the fact that young Luke Britton of Broxton came to Hayslope Church on a Sunday afternoon on purpose that he might see her; and that he would have made much more decided advances if her uncle Poyser, thinking but lightly of a young man whose father's land was so foul as old Luke Britton's, had not forbidden her aunt to encourage him by any civilities. She was aware, too, that Mr Craig, the gardener at the Chase, was over head and ears in love with her, and had lately made unmistakable avowals in luscious strawberries and hyperbolic peas. She knew still better, that Adam Bede—tall, upright, clever, brave Adam Bede—who carried such authority with all the people round about, and whom her uncle was always delighted to see of an evening, saying that " Adam knew a fine sight more o' the natur o' things than those as thought themselves his betters *"—she knew that this Adam, who was often rather stern to other people, and not much

VOL. I. M

178 ADAM BEDE.

given to run after the lasses, could be made to turn pale or red any day by a word or a look from her. Hetty's sphere of comparison was not large, but she couldn't help perceiving that Adam was "something like" a man; always knew what to say about things, could tell her uncle how to prop the hovel, and had mended the churn in no time; knew, with only looking at it, the value of the chestnut tree that was blown down, and why the damp came in the walls, and what they must do to stop the rats ; and wrote a beautiful hand that you could read off, and could do figures in his head—a degree of accomplishment totally unknown among the richest farmers of that country-side. Not at all like that slouching Luke Britton, who, when she once walked with him all the way from Broxton to HaysloiDC, had only broken silence to remark that the grey goose had begun to lay. And as for Mr Craig, the gardener, he was a sensible man enough, to be sure, but he was knockkneed, and had a queer sort of sing-song in his talk; moreover, on the most charitable supposition, he must be far on the way to forty.

Hetty was quite certain her uncle wanted her to encourage Adam, and would be pleased for her to marry him. For those were times when there was

ADAM BEDE. 179

no rigid demarcation of rank between the farmer and the respectable artisan, and on the home-hearth, as well as in the public-house, they might be seen taking their jug of ale together; the farmer having a latent sense of capital, and of weight in parish affairs, which sustained him under his conspicuous inferiority in conversation. Martin Poyser was not a frequenter of public-houses, but he liked a friendly chat over his own home-brewed ; and though it was pleasant to lay down the law to a stupid neighbour who had no notion how to make the best of his farm, it was also an agreeable variety to learn something from a clever fellow like Adam Bede. Accordingly, for the last three years—ever since he had superintended the building of the new barn—Adam had always been made welcome at the Hall Farm,

especially of a winter evening, when the whole family, in patriarchal fashion, master and mistress, children and servants, were assembled in that glorious kitchen, at well-graduated distances from the blazing fire. And for the last two years, at least, Hetty had been in the habit of hearing her uncle say, "Adam Bede may be working for wage now, but he'll be a master-man some day, as sure as I sit in this chair. Mester Bur<]i;e is in the right on't

180 ADAM BEDE.

to want liim to go partners and marry his daughter, if it's true what they say; the woman as marries him 'ull have a good take, be't Lady-day or Michaelmas,"—a remark which Mrs Poyser always followed up with her cordial assent. " Ah," she would say, " it's all very fine having a ready-made rich man, but may-happen he'll be a ready-made fool; and it's no use filling your pocket full o' money if you've got a hole in the corner. It'll do you no good to sit in a spring-cart o' your own, if you've got a soft to drive you : he 11 soon turn you over into the ditch. I allays said I'd never marry a man as had got no brains ; for where's the use of a woman having brains of her o^^ai if she's tackled to a geek as everybody's a-laughing at ? She might as well dress herself fine to sit back'ards on a donkey."

These expressions, though figurative, sufficiently indicated the bent of Mrs Poyser's mind with regard to Adam ; and though she and her husband might have viewed the subject differently if Hetty had been a daughter of their own, it was clear that they would have welcomed the match with Adam for a penniless niece. For what could Hetty have been but a servant elsewhere, if her uncle had not taken her in and brought her up as a domestic help to

ADAM BEDE. 181

her aunt, whose health since the birth of Totty had not been equal to more positive labour than the superintendence of servants and children ? But Hetty had never given Adam any steady encouragement. Even in the moments when she was most thoroughly conscious of his superiority to her other admirers, she

had never brought herself to think of accepting him. She liked to feel that this strong, skilful, keen-eyed man was in her power, and would have been indignant if he had shown the least sign of slipping from under the yoke of her coquettish tyranny, and attaching himself to the gentle Mary Burge, who would have been grateful enough for the most trifling notice from him. " Mary Burge, indeed 1 such a sallowfaced girl: if she put on a bit of pink ribbon, she looked as yellow as a crow-flower, and her hair was as straight as a hank of cotton." And always when Adam stayed away for several weeks from the HaU Faim, and otherwise made some show of resistance to his passion as a foolish one, Hetty took care to entice him back into the net by little airs of meekness and timidity, as if she were in trouble at his neglect. But as to marrying Adam, that was a very different affair ! There was nothing in the world to tempt her to do that. Her cheeks never grew a shade

182 ADAM BEDE.

deeper •when his name was mentioned; she felt no thrill when she saw him passing along the causeway by the window, or advancing towards her unexpectedly in the footpath across the meadow ; she felt nothing when his eyes rested on her, but the cold triumph of knowing that he loved her, and would not care to look at Mary Burge : he could no more stir in her the emotions that make the sweet intoxication of young love, than the mere picture of a sun can stir the spring sap in the subtle fibres of the plant. She saw him as he was—a poor man, with old parents to keep, who would not be able, for a long while to come, to give her even such luxuries as she shared in her uncle's house. And Hetty's dreams were all of luxuries : to sit in a carpeted parlour and always wear white stockings ; to have some laro^e beautiful earrino^s, such as were all the fashion; to have Nottingham lace round the top of her gown, and something to make her handkerchief smell nice, like Miss Lydia Donnithorne's when she drew it out at church ; and not to be obhged to get up early or be scolded by anybody. She thought, if Adam had been rich and could have given her these things, she loved him well enough to marry him.

ADAM BEDE. 183

But for the last few weeks a new influence had come over Hetty—vague, atmospheric, shaping itself into no self-confessed hopes or prospects, but producing a pleasant narcotic effect, making her tread the g'omid and go about her work in a sort of dream, unconscious of weight or effort, and showing her all things through a soft, liquid veil, as if she were living not in this solid world of brick and stone, but in a beatified world, such as the sun lights up for us in the waters. Hetty had become aware that Mr Arthur Donnithorne would take a good deal of trouble for the chance of seeing her; that he always placed himself at church so as to have the fullest view of her both sitting and standing; that he was constantly finding reasons for calling at the HaU Farm, and always would contrive to say something for the sake of making her speak to him and look at him. The poor child no more conceived at present the idea that the young squire could ever be her lover, than a baker's pretty daughter in the crowd, whom a young emperor distinguishes by an imperial but admiring smile, conceives that she shall be made empress. But the baker's daughter goes home and dreams of the handsome young emperor, and perhaps weighs the flour amiss while

184 ADAM BEDE.

she is thinking what a heavenly lot it must be to have him for a husband: and so poor Hetty had got a face and a presence haunting her waking and sleeping dreams; bright, soft glances had penetrated her, and suffused her life with a strange, happy languor. The eyes that shed those glances were really not half so fine as Adam's, which sometimes looked at her with a sad, beseeching tenderness; but they had found a ready medium in Hetty's little silly imagination, whereas Adam's could get no entrance through that atmosphere. For three weeks, at least, her inward life had consisted of little else than living through in memory the looks and words Arthur had directed towards her—of little else than recalling the sensations with which she heard his voice outside the house, and saw him enter, and became conscious that his eyes were fixed on

her, and then became conscious that a tall figure, looking down on her with eyes that seemed to touch her, was coming nearer in clothes of beautiful texture, with an odour like that of a flower-garden borne on the evening breeze. Foolish thoughts ! you see ; having nothing at all to do with the love felt by sweet girls of eighteen in our days; but all this happened, you must remember, nearly sixty years ago, and Hetty was quite uneducated—a simple farmer's girl, to

ADAM BEDE. 185

whom a gentleman with a white hand was dazzling as an Olympian God. Until to-day, she had never looked farther into the future than to the next time Captain Domiithorne would come to the Farm, or the next Sunday when she should see him at church; but now she thought, perhaps he would try to meet her when she went to the Chase to-morrow—and if he should speak to her, and walk a little way, when nobody was by! That had never happened yet; and now her imagination, instead of retracing the past, was busy fashioning what would happen to-morrow—whereabout in the Chase she should see him coming towards her, how she should put her new rose-coloured ribbon on, which he had never seen, and what he would say to her to make her return his glance—a glance which she would be living through in her memory, over and over again, all the rest of the day.

In this state of mind, how could Hetty give any feeling to Adam's troubles, or think much about poor old Thias being drowned ? Young souls, in such pleasant delirium as hers, are as insympathetic as butterflies sipping nectar; they are isolated from all appeals by a barrier of dreams—by invisible looks and impalpable arms.

While Hetty's hands were busy packing up the

186 ADAM BEDE.

butter, and her head filled with these pictures of the morrow, Arthur Doniithorne, riding by Mr Irwine's side towards the valley of the Willow Brook, had also certain indistinct anticipations, running as an

under-current in his mind while he was listening to Mr Irwine's account of Dinah ;—indistinct, yet strong enough to make him feel rather conscious when Mr Irwine suddenly said,

"What fascinated you so in Mrs Poyser's dairy, Arthur? Have you become an amateur of damp quarries and skimming-dishes?"

Arthur knew the Ector too well to suppose that a clever invention would be of any use, so he said, with his accustomed frankness,

"No, I went to look at the pretty butter-maker, Hetty Sorrel. She's a perfect Hebe ; and if I were an artist, I would paint her. It's amazing what pretty girls one sees among the farmers' daughters, when the men are such clowns. That common round red face one sees sometimes in the men—aU cheek and no features, like Martin Poyser's—comes out in the women of the family as the most charming phiz imaginable."

"Well, I have no objection to your contemplating Hetty in an artistic light, but I must not have

ADAM BEDE. 187

you feeding her vanity, and filling her little noddle with the notion that she's a great beauty, attractive to fine gentlemen, or you will spoil her for a poor man's wife—honest Craig's, for example, whom I have seen bestowing soft glances on her. The little puss seems already to have airs enough to make a husband as miserable as it's a law of nature for a quiet man to be when he marries a beauty. Apropos of marrying, I hope our friend Adam will get settled, now the poor old man's gone. He will only have his mother to keep in future, and I've a notion that there's a kindness between him and that nice modest girl, Mary Burge, from something that fell from old Jonathan one day when I was talking to him. But when I mentioned the subject to Adam he looked uneasy, and turned the conversation. I suppose the love-making doesn't run smooth, or perhaps Adam hangs back till he's in a better position. He has independence of spirit enough for two men—rather an excess of pride, if anything."

" That would be a capital match for Adam. He would slip into old Burge's shoes, and make a fine thincr of that buildincr business, I'll answer for him. I should like to see him well settled in this parish ; he would be ready then to act as my grand-vizier

188 ADAM BEDE.

when I wanted one. We could plan no end of repairs and improvements together. I've never seen the girl, though, I think—at least I've never looked at her."

" Look at her next Sunday at church—she sits with her father on the left of the reading-desk. You needn't look quite so much at Hetty Sorrel then. W^hen I've made up my mind that I can't afford to buy a tempting dog, I take no notice of him, because if he took a strong fancy to me, and looked lovingly at me, the struggle between arithmetic and inclination might become unpleasantly severe. I pique myself on my wisdom there, Arthur, and as an old fellow to whom wisdom has become cheap, I bestow it upon you."

" Thank you. It may stand me in good stead some day, though I don't know that I have any present use for it. Bless me ! how the brook has overflowed. Suppose we have a canter, now we're at the bottom of the hill."

That is the gxeat advantage of dialogue on horseback ; it can be merged any minute into a trot or a canter, and one might have escaped from Socrates himself in the saddle. The two friends were free from the necessity of further conversation till they pulled up in the lane behind Adam's cottage.

CHAPTER X.

DINAH VISITS LISBETH.

At five o'clock Lisbeth came dowii-stairs with a large key in her hand : it was the key of the chamber where her husband lay dead. Throughout the day, except in her occasional outbursts of wailing

grief, she had been in incessant movement, performing the initial duties to her dead with the awe and exactitude that belong to religious rites. She had brought out her little store of bleached linen, which she had for long years kept in reserve for this supreme use. It seemed but yesterday—that time so many midsummers ago, when she had told Thias where this linen lay, that he might be sure and reach it out for her when she died, for she was the elder of the two. Then there had been the work of cleansing to the strictest purity every object in the sacred chamber, and of removing from it every trace of common daily occupation. The small win

190 ADAM BEDE.

dow which had hitherto freely let in the frosty moonlight or the warm summer sunrise on the working man's slumber, must now be darkened with a fair white sheet, for this was the sleep which is as sacred under the bare rafters as in ceiled houses. Lisbeth had even mended a long-neglected and unnoticeable rent in the checkered bit of bedcurtain ; for the moments were few and precious now in which she would be able to do the smallest office of respect or love for the still corpse, to which in all her thoughts she attributed some consciousness. Our dead are never dead to us until we have forgotten them ; they can be injured by us, they can be wounded; they know all our penitence, all our aching sense that their place is empty ; all the kisses we bestow on the smallest relic of their presence. And the aged peasant-woman most of all believes that her dead are conscious. Decent burial was what Lisbeth had been thinking of for herself through years of thrift, with an indistinct expectation that she should know when she was being carried to the churchyard, followed by her husband and her sons; and now she felt as if the greatest work of her life were to be done in seeing that Thias was buried decently before her—under the

ADAM BEDE. 191

white thorn, where once, in a dream, she had thought she lay in the coffin, yet all the while saw the sunshine above, and smelt the white

blossoms that were so thick upon the thorn the Sunday she went to be churched after Adam was born.

But now she had done everything that could be done to-day in the chamber of death—had done it all herself, with some aid from her sons in lifting, for she would let no one be fetched to help her from the village, not beino; fond of female neighbours generally; and her favourite Dolly, the old housekeeper at Mr Burge's, who had come to condole with her in the morning as soon as she heard of Thias's death, was too dim-sighted to be of much use. She had locked the door, and now held the key in her hand, as she threw herself wearily into a chair that stood out of its place in the middle of the house floor, where in ordinary times she would never have consented to sit. The kitchen had had none of her attention that day ; it was soiled with the tread of muddy shoes, and imtidy with clothes and other objects out of place. But what at another time would have been intolerable to Lisbeth's habits of order and cleanliness, seemed to her now just what should be ; it was ri<iht that things should look

192 ADAM BEDE.

strange and disordered and wTetclied, now the aid man had come to his end in that sad way : the kitchen ought not to look as if nothing had happened. Adam, overcome with the agitations and exertions of the day after his night of hard work, had fallen asleep on a bench in the workshop ; and Seth was in the back kitchen making a fire of sticks that he might get the kettle to boil, and persuade his mother to have a cup of tea, an indulgence which she rarely allowed herself

There was no one in the kitchen when Lisbeth entered and thi'ew herself into the chaii\ She looked round with blank eyes at the dirt and confusion on which the bright afternoon sun shone dimly; it was all of a piece "^\ith the sad confusion of her mind—that confusion which belongs to the first hours of a sudden sorrow, when the poor human soul is like one who has been deposited sleeping among the ruins of a vast city, and wakes up in dreary amazement, not knowing whether it is the growing or the dying day—not knowing why and

whence came this illimitable scene of desolation, or why he too finds himself desolate in the midst of it.

At another time, Lisbeth's first thought would

ADAM BEDE. 193

have been, " Where is Adam ?" but the sudden death of her husband had restored him in these hours to that first place in her affections which he had held six-and-twenty years ago : she had forgotten his faults as we forget the sorrows of our departed childhood, and thought of nothing but the young husband's kindness and the old man's patience. Her eyes continued to wander blankly until Seth came in and began to remove some of the scattered things, and clear the small round deal-table that he might set out his mother's tea upon it.

" What art goin' to do ?" she said, rather peevishly.

"I want thee to have a cup of tea, mother," answered Seth, tenderly. " It 'll do thee good ; and I'll put two or three of these things away, and make the house look more comfortable."

" Comfortable ! How canst talk o' ma'in' things comfortable ? Let a-be, let a-be. There's no comfort for me no more," she went on, the tears coming when she began to speak, " now thy poor feyther's gone, as I'n washed for and mended, an' got's victual for m for thirty 'ear, an' him allays so pleased vn iverything I done for 'm, an' used to be so

VOL. I. N

194 ADAM BEDE

handy an' do the jobs for me when I war ill an' cumbered wi' th' babby, an' made me the posset an' brought it up-stairs as proud as could be, an' carried the lad as war as heavy as two children for five mile an' ne'er grumbled, all the way to War'son Wake, 'cause I

wanted to go an' see my sister, as war dead an' gone the very next Christmas as e'er come. An' him to be drowned in the brook as we passed o'er the day we war married an' come home too'ether, an' he'd made them lots o' shelves for me to put my plates an' things on, an' showed 'em me as proud as could be, 'cause he know'd I should be pleased. An' he war to die an' me not to know, but to be a-sleepin' i' my bed, as if I caredna nought about it. Eh ! an' me to live to see that! An' us as war young folks once, an' thought we should do rarely when we were married. Let a-be, lad, let a-be! I wanna ha' no tay: I carena if I ne'er ate nor drink no more. WTien one end o' th' bridge tumbles down, where's th' use o' th' other stannin'? I may's well die, an' foller my old man. There's no knowin' but he'll want me."

Here Lisbeth broke from words into moans, swaying herself backwards and forwards on her

ADAM BEDE. 195

chair. Seth, always timid in his behaviour towards his mother, from the sense that he had no influence over her, felt it was useless to attempt to persuade or soothe her, till this passion was past; so he contented himself with tending the back-kitchen fire, and folding up his father's clothes, which had been hanging out to dry since morning ; afraid to move about in the room where his mother was, lest he should iiTitate her further.

But after Lisbeth had been rocking herself and moaning for some minutes, she suddenly paused, and said aloud to herself,

" ril go an' see arter Adam, for I canna think where he's gotten ; an' I want him to go upstairs wi' me afore it's dark, for the minutes to look at the corpse is like the meltin' snow/'

Seth overheard this, and coming into the kitchen again, as his mother rose from her chair, he said,

"Adam's asleep in the workshop, mother. Thee'dst better not w^ake him. He was o'erwrought with work and trouble."

" Wake him ? Who's a-ojoin' to wake him ? I shanna wake him wi' lookin' at him. I hanna seen the lad this two hour—I'd welly forgot as he'd e'er growed up from ababby when's feyther carried him."

19G ADAM BEDE.

Adam was seated on a rough bench, his head supported by his arm, which rested from the shoulder to the elbow on the long planing-table in the middle of the workshop. It seemed as if he had sat down for a few minutes' rest, and had fallen asleep without slipping from his first attitude of sad, fatigued thought. His face, unwashed since yesterday, looked pallid and clammy ; his hair was tossed shaggily about his forehead, and his closed eyes had the sunken look which follows upon watching and sorrow. His brow was knit, and his whole face had an expression of weariness and pain. Gyp was evidently uneasy, for he sat on his haunches resting his nose on his master's stretchedout leer, and dividino- the time between lickinor the hand that hung listlessly down, and glancing with a listening air towards the door. The poor dog was hungry and restless, but would not leave his master, and was waiting impatiently for some change in the scene. It was owing to this feeling on Gyp's part, that when Lisbeth came into the workshop, and advanced towards Adam as noiselessly as she could, her intention not to awake him was immediately defeated ; for Gyp's excitement was too great to find vent in anything short of a

ADAM BEDE. 197

sharp bark, and in a moment Adam opened his eyes and saw his mother standing before him. It was not very unlike his di'eam, for his sleep had been Httle more than living through again, in a fevered delii'ious way, all that had happened since daybreak, and his mother with her fretful grief was present to him through it all. The chief difference between the reality and the vision was, that in his dream Hetty was continually coming before him in bodily presence—strangely mingling herself as an actor in scenes with which she had nothing to do. She was even by the Willow Brook; she made his mother angry by coming into the house ; and he met her with her

smart clothes quite wet through as he walked in the rain to Treddleston, to tell the coroner. But wherever Hetty came, his mother was sure to follow soon ; and when he opened his eyes, it was not at all startling to see her standing near him.

" Eh, my lad, my lad!" Lisbeth burst out immediately, her wailing impulse returning, for grief in its freshness feels the need of associating its loss and its lament with every change of scene and incident, " thee'st got nobody now but thy old mother to torment thee and be a burthen to thee :

198 ADAM BEDE.

thy poor feyther 'ull ue'er anger thee no more ; an' thy mother may's well go arter him—the sooner the better—for I'm no good to nobody now. One old coat 'nil do to patch another, but it's good for nocht else. Thee'dst like t' ha' a wife to mend thy clothes an' get thy victual, better nor thy old mother. An' I shall be nocht but cumber, a-sittin' i' th' chimney-corner. (Adam -winc'd and moved uneasily; he dreaded, of all things, to hear his mother speak of Hetty.) But if thy feyther had lived, he'd ne'er ha' wanted me to go to make room for another, for he could no more ha' done wi'out me nor one side o' the scithers can do m'out the tother. Eh, we should ha' been botli flung away together, an' then I shouldna ha' seen this day, an' one buryin' 'ud ha' done for us both." Here Lisbeth paused, but Adam sat in pained silence : he could not speak otherwise than tenderly to his mother to-day ; but he could not help being irritated by this plaint. It was not possible for poor Lisbeth to know how it affected Adam, any more than it is possible for a wounded dog to know how his moans affect the nerves of his master. Like all complaining women, she complained in the expectation of being soothed, and when Adam said

ADAM BEDE. 199

nothing, she was only prompted to complain more bitterly.

" I know thee couldst do better wi'out me, for thee couldst go where thee likedst, an' marry them as thee likedst. But I donna want to say

thee nay, let thee bring home who thee wut; I'd ne'er open my lips to find faut, for when folks is old an' o' no use, they may think theirsens well off to get the bit an' the sup, though they'n to swallow ill words wi 't. An' if thee'st set thy heart on a lass as '11 bring thee noght and waste all, when thee mightst ha' them as 'ud make a man on thee, I'll say noght, now thy feyther's dead an' drownded, for I'm no better nor an old haft when the blade's gone."

Adam, unable to bear this any longer, rose silently from the bench, and walked out of the workshop into the kitchen. But Lisbeth followed him.

"Thee wutna go up-staii^s an' see thy feyther, then ? I'n done every thin' now, an' he'd like thee to go an' look at 'm, for he war allays so pleased when thee wast mild to 'm."

Adam turned round at once, and said, " Yes, mother; let us go up-stairs. Come, Seth, let us go together."

They went up-stairs, and for five minutes all was

200 ADA:\r bede.

silence. Then the key was turned again, and there was a sound of footsteps on the stairs. But Adam did not come down again ; he was too weary and worn-out to encounter more of his mother's querulous grief, and he went to rest on his bed. Lisbeth no sooner entered the kitchen and sat down than she threw her apron over her head, and began to cry and moan, and rock herself as before. Seth thought, "She will be quieter by-and-by, now we have been up-stairs;" and he went into the back kitchen again to tend his little fire, hoping that he should presently induce her to have some tea.

Lisbeth had been rocking herself in this way for more than five minutes, giving a low moan with every forward movement of her body, when she suddenly felt a hand placed gently on hers, and a sweet treble voice said to her, " Dear sister, the Lord has sent me to see if I can be a comfort to you.^

Lisbeth paused, in a listening attitude, without removing her apron from her face. The voice was strange to her. Could it be her sister's spirit come back to her from the dead after all those years ? She trembled, and dared not look.

Dinah, believing that this pause of wonder was

ADAM BEDE. 201

in itself a relief for the sorrowing woman, said no more just yet, but quietly took off her bonnet, and then, motioning silence to Seth, who, on hearing her voice, had come in with a beating heart, laid one hand on the back of Lisbeth's chair, and leaned over her, that she might be aware of a friendly presence. Slowly Lisbeth drew down her apron, and timidly she opened her dim dark eyes. She saw nothing at first but a face—a pale, pale face, with loving grey eyes, and it was quite unknown to her. Her wonder increased; perhaps it was an angel. But in the same instant Dinah had laid her hand on Lisbeth's again, and the old woman looked down at it. It was a much smaller hand than her own, but it was not white and delicate, for Dinah had never worn a

fflove in her life, and her hand bore the traces of labour from her childhood upwards. Lisbeth looked earnestly at the hand for a moment, and then fixing her eyes again on Dinah's face, said, with something of restored courage, but in a tone of surprise,

" Why, ye're a workin' woman!"

"Yes, I am Dinah Morris, and I work in the cotton-miU when I am at home."

" Ah !" said Lisbeth slowly, still wondering ; "ye comed in so light, like the shadow on the wall, an'

202 ADAM BEDE.

spoke i' my ear, as I thought you might be a sperrit. YeVe got a'most the face o' one as is a-sit tin' on the grave i' Adam's new Bible."

" I come from the Hall Farm now. You know Mrs Poyser—she's my aunt, and she has heard of your great affliction, and is very sorry ; and I'm come to see if I can be any help to you in your trouble; for I know your sons Adam and Seth, and I know you have no daughter, and when the clergyman told me how the hand of God was heavy upon you, my heart went out towards you, and I felt a command to come and be to you in the place of a daughter in this grief, if you will let me."

" Ah ! I know who y' are now; y' are a Methody, like Seth; he's tould me on you," said Lisbeth, fretfully, her overpowering sense of pain returning, now her wonder was gone. " Ye'll make it out as trouble's a good thing, like he allays does. But Where's the use o' talkin' to me a-that'n? Ye canna make the smart less wi' talkin'. Ye'll ne'er make me believe as it's better for me not to ha' my old man die in 's bed, if he must die, an' ha' the parson to pray by 'm, an' me to sit by 'm, an'

tell him ne'er to mind th' ill words I n gen him sometimes when I war angered, an' to gi' 'm a bit an' a

ADAM BEDE. 203

sup, as long as a bit an' a sup he'd swallow. But eh ! to die i' the could water, an' us close to 'm, an' ne'er to know; an' me a-sleepin', as if I ne'er belonged to 'm no more nor if he'd been a journeyman tramp from nobody knows where."

Here Lisbeth began to cry and rock herself again; and Dinah said,

" Yes, dear friend, your affliction is gTeat. It would be hardness of heart to say that your trouble was not hea\y to bear. God didn't send me to you to make light of your sorrow, but to mourn with you, if you will let me. If you had a table spread for a feast, and was making merry with your friends, you would think it was kind to let me come and sit down and rejoice with you, because you would think I should like to share those good things ; but I should like better to share in your trouble and your labour, and it would seem harder to me if you denied me that. You won't send me away ? You're not angry with me for coming ?"

" Nay, nay ; angered ! who said I war angered ? It war good on you to come. An' Seth, why domia ye get her some tay? Ye war in a hurry to get some for me, as had no need, but ye donna think o' gettin' 'i for them as wants it. Sit ye down; sit ye

204 ADAM BEDE.

down. I thank ye kindly for comin', for it's little wage ye get by walkin' through the wet fields to see an old woman like me. . . . Nay, In got no daughter o' my own—ne'er had one—an' I warna sorry, for they're poor queechy things, gells is ; I allays wanted to ha' lads, as could fend for theirsens. An' the lads 'ull be marryin—I shall ha' daughters enoo, and too many. But now, do ye make the tay as ye like it, for I'n got no taste i' my mouth this day—it's ail one what I swaller—it's all got the taste o' sorrow wi't."

Dinah took care not to betray that she had had her tea, and accepted Lisbeth's invitation very readily, for the sake of persuading the old woman herself to take the food and drink she so much needed after a day of hard work and fasting.

Seth was so happy now Dinah was in the house that he could not help thinking her presence was worth purchasing with a life in which grief incessantly followed upon grief; but the next moment he reproached himself—it was almost as if he were rejoicing in his father's sad death. Nevertheless, the joy of being with Dinah would triumph : it was like the influence of climate, which no resistance can overcome. And the feeling even suffused itself over

ADAM BEDE. 205

his face so as to attract his mother's notice, while she was drinking of her tea.

" Thee may'st well talk o' trouble bein' a good thing, Seth, for thee thiv'st on't. Thee look'st as if thee know'dst no more o' care an' cumber nor when thee wast a babby a-lyin' awake i' th' cradle. For thee'dst allays lie still wi' thy eyes open, an' Adam ne'er 'ud lie still a minute when he wakened. Thee wast allays like a bag o' meal as can ne'er be bruised, though, for the matter o' that, thy poor feyther war just such another. But 7/cVe got the same look too" (here Lisbeth turned to Dinah). " I reckon it's wi* bein' a Methody. Not as I'm a-findin' faut wi' ye for't, for ye've no call to be frettin', an' somehow ye looken sorry too. Eh ? well, if the Methodies are fond o' trouble, they're like to thrive: it's a pity they canna hat all, an' take it away from them as donna like it. I could ha' gi'en 'em plenty; for when I'd gotten my old man I war worreted from mom till night; an' now he's gone, I'd be glad for the worst o'er again."

" Yes," said Dinah, careful not to oppose any feeling of Lisbeth's, for her reliance, in her smallest words and deeds, on a divine guidance, always issued in that finest woman's tact which proceeds from

206 ADAM BEDE.

acute and ready sympathy,—" yes; I remember, too, when my dear aunt died, I longed for the sound of her bad cough in the nights, instead of the silence that came when she was gone. But now, dear friend, drink this other cup of tea and eat a little more/

" What! " said Lisbeth, taking the cup and speaking in a less querulous tone, " had ye got no feyther and mother, then, as ye war so sorry about your aunt ?"

" No, I never knew a father or mother ; my aunt brought me up from a baby. She had no children, for she was never married, and she brought me up as tenderly as if I'd been her own child."

" Eh, she'd fine work wi' ye, I'll warrant, bringin' ye up from a babby, an' her a lone woman—it's iU bringin' up a cade lamb. But I daresay ye warn a franzy, for ye look as if ye'd ne'er been angered i' your life. But what did ye do when your aunt died, an' why didna ye come to live i' this country, bein' as Mrs Poyser's your aunt too ?"

Dinah, seeing that Lisbeth's attention was attracted, told her the story of her early life—how she had been brought up to work hard, and wliat sort of place Sno\field was, and how many people liad a

ADAM BEDE. 207

hard life there—coll the details that she thought likely to interest Lisbeth. Tlie old woman listened, and forgot to be fretful, unconsciously subject to the soothing influence of Dinah's face and voice. After a while she was persuaded to let the kitchen be made tidy; for Dinah was bent on this, believing that the sense of order and quietude around her would hel}} in disposing Lisbeth to join in the prayer she longed to pour forth at her side. Seth, meanwhile, went out to chop wood; for he surmised that Dinah would like to be left alone with his mother.

Lisbeth sat watching her as she moved about in her still, quick way, and said at last, " Ye've got a notion o' cleanin' up. I wouldna mind ha'in' ye for a daughter, for ye wouldna spend the lad's wage i' fine

clothes and waste. Ye're not like the lasses o' this country-side. I reckon folks is different at Snowfield from what they are here."

" They have a different sort of life, many of 'em," said Dinah ; " they work at different things—some in the mill, and many in the mines, in the villages round about. But the heart of man is the same everywhere, and there are the children of this world and the children of liicht there as well as elsewhere.

208 ADAM BEDE.

But we've many more Methodists there than in this country."

" Well, I didna know as the Methody women war like ye, for there's Will Maskery's wife, as they say's a big Methody, isna pleasant to look at, at all rd as lief look at a toad. An' I'm thinkin' I wouldna mind if ye'd stay an' sleep here, for I should like to see ye i' th' house i' the mornin'. But may-happen they'll be looldn' for ye at Mester Poyser's."

" No," said Dinah, " they don't expect me, and I should like to stay, if you'll let me/'

" Well, there's room; I'n got my bed laid i' th' little room o'er the back kitchen, an' ye can lie beside me. I'd be glad to ha' ye wi' me to speak to i' th' night, for ye've got a nice way o' talkin'. It puts me i' mind o' the swallows as was under the thack last 'ear, when they fust begun to sing low an' soft-like 1' the morning. Eh, but my old man war fond o' them birds! an' so war Adam, but they'n ne'er comed again this 'ear. Happen they're dead too."

" There," said Dinah, " now the kitchen looks tidy, and now, dear mother—for I'm your daughter to-night, you know—I should like you to wash your

ADAM BEDE. 209

face and have a clean cap on. Do you remember what David did, when God took away his child from liim ? While the child was yet alive he fasted and prayed to God to spare it, and he would neither eat nor drink, but lay on the ground all night, beseechino- God for the child. But when he knew it was dead, he rose up from the ground and washed and anointed himself, and changed his clothes, and ate and drank ; and when they asked him how it was that he seemed to have left off grieving now the child was dead, he said, ' While the child was yet alive, I fasted and wept; for I said, Who can tell whether God will be gracious to me, that the child may live ? But now he is dead, why should I fast ? can I bring him back again ? I shall go to him, but

> j>

he shall not return to me.

" Eh, that's a true word 1" said Lisbeth. " Yea, my old man wanna come back to me, but I shall go to him—the sooner the better. Well, ye may do as ye like wi' me: there's a clean cap i' that drawer, an' I'll go i' the back kitchen an' wash my face.

An' Seth, thee mayst reach down Adam's new Bible wi' th' picters in, an' she shall read us a chapter.

Eh, I like them words—I shall go to him, but he wanna come back to me."

VOL. I. o

210 ADAM BEDE.

Dinah and Seth were both inwardly offering thanks for the greater quietness of spirit that had come over Lisbeth. This was what Dinah had been trying to bring about, through all her still sympathy and absence from exhortation. From her girlhood upwards she had had experience among the sick and the mourning, among minds hardened and shrivelled through poverty and ignorance, and had gained the subtlest perception of the mode in which they could best be touched, and softened into willingness to receive words of spiritual consolation or warning. As Dinah expressed it, " She was never left to herself; but it was always given her when to keep silence and when to speak." And do we not all agree to call rapid thought and noble impulse by the name of inspiration ? After our subtlest analysis of the mental process, we must still say, as Dinah did, that our highest thoughts and our best deeds are all given to us.

And so there was earnest prayer—there was faith, love, and hope pouring itself forth that evening in the little kitchen. And poor aged fretful Lisbeth, without grasping any distinct idea, without going through any course of religious emotions, felt a vague

ADAM BEDE. 211

sense of goodness and love, and of something right lying underneath and beyond all this sorrowing life. She couldn't understand the sorrow; but, for these moments, under the subduing influence of Dinah's spirit, she felt that she must be patient and still

CHAPTER XI.

IN THE COTTAGE.

It was but half-past four the next morning, when Dinah, tired of lying awake listening to the birds, and watching the erowino; liaht throuogh the little window in the garret roof, rose and began to dress herself very quietly, lest she should disturb Lisbeth. But akeady some one else was astir in the house, and had gone down stairs, preceded by Gyp. The dog's pattering step was a sure sign that it was Adam who went down; but Dinah was not aware of this, and she thought it was

more likely to be Seth, for he had told her how Adam had staid up working the night before. Seth, however, had only just awaked at the sound of the opening door. The exciting influence of the previous day, heightened at last by Dinah's unexpected presence, had not been counteracted by any bodily weariness, for he had not done his ordinary amount of hard work ; and

ADAM BEDE. 213

SO when he went to bed, it was not till he had tired himself with hours of tossing wakefulness, that drowsiness came, and led on a header morning sleep than was usual with him.

But Adam had been refreshed by his long rest, and with his habitual impatience of mere passivity, he was eager to begin the new day, and subdue sadness by his strong will and strong arm. The white mist lay in the valley ; it was going to be a bright, warm day, and he would start to work again when he had had his breakfast.

" There's nothinor but what's bearable as lons: as a man can work," he said to himself: '• the natur o' things doesn't change, though it seems as if one's own life was nothing but change. The square o' four is sixteen, and you must lengthen your lever in proportion to your weight, is as true when a man's miserable as when he's happy ; and the best o' working is, it gives you a gi^ip hold o' things outside your own lot."

As he dashed the cold water over his head and face, he felt completely himself again, and ^vith his black eyes as keen as ever, and his thick black hair all glistening with the fresh moisture, he went into the workshop to look out the wood for his father's

214 ADAM BEDE.

coffin, iutending that he and Seth should cany it with them to Jonathan Burge's, and have the coffin made by one of the workmen there, so that his mother might not see and hear the sad task going forward at home.

He had just gone into the workshop when his quick ear detected a light rapid foot on the stairs— certainly not liis mother's. He had been in bed and asleep when Dinah had come in, in the evening, and now he wondered whose step this could be. A foolish thought came, and moved him strangely. As if it could be Hetty! She was the last person likely to be in the house. And yet he felt reluctant to go and look, and have the clear proof that it was some one else. He stood leaning on a plank he had taken hold of, listenino; to sounds which his imao;ination interpreted for him so pleasantly, that the keen strong face became suffused with a timid tenderness. The light footstep moved about the kitchen, followed by the sound of the sweeping brush, hardly making so much noise as the lightest breeze that chases the autumn leaves along the dusty path ; and Adam's imagination saw a dimpled face, with dark bright eyes and roguish smiles looking backward at this brush, and a rounded fio-nre just leaning a little to

ADAM BEDE. 215

clasiⁱ the handle. A very foolish thought—it could not be Hetty ; but the only way of dismissing such nonsense from his head was to go and see who it was, for his fancy only got nearer and nearer to belief while he stood there listening. He loosed the plank, and went to the kitchen door.

" How do you do, Adam Bede ?" said Dinah, in her calm treble, pausing from her sweeping, and fixing her mild grave eyes upon him. " I trust you feel rested and strengthened again to bear the burthen and heat of the day."

It was like dreaming of the sunshine, and awaking in the moonlight. Adam had seen Dinah several times, but always at the Hall Farm, where he was not very vividly conscious of any woman's presence except Hetty's, and he had only in the last day or two begun to suspect that Seth was in love with her, so that his attention had not hitherto been drawn towards her for his brother's sake. But now her slim figure, her plain black gown, and her pale serene face, impressed him with all the force that belongs to a reality contrasted

with a preoccupying fancy. For the first moment or two he made no answer, but looked at her with the concentrated, examining glance which a man gives; to an object in which he

216 ADAM BEDK.

has suddenly begun to be interested. Dinah, for the first time in her life, felt a painful self-consciousness; there was something in the dark penetrating glance of this strong man so different from the mildness and timidity of his brother Seth. A faint blush came, which deepened as she wondered at it. This blush recalled Adam from his forgetfulness.

" I was quite taken by surprise; it was very good of you to come and see my mother in her trouble/" he said, in a gentle grateful tone, for his quick mind told him at once how she came to be there. " I hope my mother was thankful to have you," he added, wondering rather anxiously what had been Dinah's reception.

" Yes," said Dinah, resuming her work, " she seemed greatly comforted after a while, and she's had a good deal of rest in the night by times. She was fast asleep when I left her."

" Who was it took the news to the Hall Farm ?" said Adam, his thoughts reverting to some one there; he wondered whether she had felt anything about it.

" It was Mr li^wine, the clergyman, told me, and my aunt was grieved for your mother when she heard it, and wanted nic to come ; and so is my

ADAM BEDE. 217

uncle, I'm sure, now he's heard it, but he was gone out to Eosseter all yesterday. They'll look for you there as soon as you've got time to go, for there's nobody round that hearth but what's glad to see

you."

Dinah, with her sjnnpathetic divination, knew quite well that Adam was longing to hear if Hetty had said anytliing about their trouble ; she was too rigorously truthful for benevolent invention, but she had contrived to say something in whicli Hetty was tacitly included Love has a way of cheating itself consciously, like a child who plays at solitary hideand-seeek ; it is pleased with assurances that it all the while disbelieves. Adam liked what Dinah had said so much that his mind was directly full of the next visit he should pay to the Hall Farm, when Hetty would perhaps behave more kindly to him than she had ever done before.

" But you won't be there yourself any longer?" he said to Dinah.

" No, I go back to Snowfield on Satm^day, and I shall have to set out to Treddleston early, to be in time for the Oakboume caiTier. So I must pro back to the farm to-night, that I may have the last day with mv aunt and her children. But I can stav

218 ADAM BEDE.

here all to-day if your mother would like me ; and her heart seemed inclined towards me last night/'

"Ah, then, she's sure to want you to-day. If mother takes to people at the beginning, she's sure to get fond of 'em ; but she's a strange way of not liking young women. Though, to be sure," Adam went on smiling, " her not liking other young women is no reason why she shouldn't like you."

Hitherto Gyp had been assisting at this conversation in motionless silence, seated on his haunches, and alternately looking up in his master's face to watch its expression, and observing Dinah's movements about the kitchen. The kind smile with which Adam uttered the last words was apparently decisive with Gyp of the light in which the stranger was to be regarded, and as she turned round after putting aside her sweeping-brush, he trotted towards her, and put up his muzzle against her hand in a friendly way.

" You see Gyp bids you welcome," said Adam, " and he's very slow to welcome strangers."

" Poor dog 1" said Dinah, patting the rough grey coat, " I've a strange feeling about the dumb things as if they wanted to speak, and it was a trouble to 'em because they couldn't. I can't help being sorry

ADAM BEDE. 219

for the dogs always, though perhaps there's no need. But they may well have more in them than they know how to make us understand, for we can't say half what we feel, with all our words/'

Seth came down now, and was pleased to find Adam talking with Dinah; he wanted Adam to know how much better she was than all other women. But after a few words of greeting, Adam drew him into the workshop to consult about the coffin, and Dinah went on with her cleaning.

By six o'clock they were all at breakfast with Lisbeth, in a kitchen as clean as she could have made it herself. The window and door were open, and the morning air brought with it a mingled scent of southernwood, thyme, and sweetbrier from the patch of garden by the side of the cottage. Dinah did not sit down at first, but moved about serving the others with the warm porridge and the toasted oat-cake, which she had got ready in the usual way, for she had asked Seth to tell her just what his mother gave them for breakfast. Lisbeth had been unusually silent since she came down stairs, apparently requiring some time to adjust her ideas to a state of things in which she came down like a lady to find all the work done, and sat still to be waited

220 ADAM BEDE.

on. Her new sensations seemed to exclude the remembrance of her grief. At last, after tasting the porridge, she broke silence :

"Ye might ha' made the parridge worse," she said to Dinah, "I can ate it wi'out it's tumin' my stomach. It might ha' been a trifle thicker an' no harm, an' I allays putten a sprig o' mint in mysen; but how's ye t' know that? Th' lads arena like to get folks as 'ull make their parridge as I'n made it for 'em; it's well if they get onybody as '11 make parridge at all. But ye might do, wi' a bit o' showin'; for ye're a stirrm' body in a mornin', an' ye've a light heel, an' ye've cleaned the house well enoof for a ma'-shift."

"Makeshift, mother?" said Adam. "Why, I think the house looks beautiful. I don't know how it could look better."

"Thee dostna know. Nay: how's thee to know? Th' men ne'er know whether the floor's cleaned or cat-licked. But thee't know when thee gets thy parridge burnt, as thee't like to ha'it when I'n gi'en o'er makin' it. Thee't think thy mother war good for summat then."

"Dinah," said Seth, "do come and sit down now and have your breakfast. We're all served now."

ADAM BEDE. 221

"Ay, come an' sit ye down—do," said Lisbeth, "an' ate a mossel; ye'd need, arter bein' upo' your legs this hour an' half a'ready. Come, then," she added, in a tone of complaining affection, as Dinah sat down by her side, "I'll be loath for ye t' go, but ye canna stay much longer, I doubt. I could put up wi' ye i' th' house better nor wi' most folks."

"Ill stay till to-night if you're willing," said Dinah. "I'd stay longer, only I'm going back to Snowfield on Saturday, and I must be with my aunt to-morrow."

"Eh, I'd ne'er go back to that country. My old man come from that Stonyshire side, but he left it when he war a young un, an' i' the right on't too; for he said as there war no wood there, an' it 'ud ha' been a bad countiy for a carpenter."

" Ah," said Adam, " I remember father telling me when I was a little lad, that he made up his mind if ever he moved it should be south'ard. But I'm not so sure about it. Bartle Massey says— and he knows the South—as the northern men are a finer breed than the southern, harder-headed and stronger-bodied, and a deal taller. And then he says, in some o' those counties it's as flat as the

222 ADAM BEDE.

back o' your hand, and you can see nothing of a distance, without climbing up the highest trees. I couldn't abide that: I like to go to work by a road that'll take me up a bit of a hill, and see the fields for miles round me, and a bridge, or a town, or a bit of a steeple here and there. It makes you feel the world's a big place, and there's other men working in it with their heads and hands besides yourself."

"I like th' hills best," said Seth, "when the clouds are over your head, and you see the sun shining ever so far off, over the Loamford way, as I've often done o' late, on the stormy days : it seems to me as if that was heaven where there's always joy and sunshine, though this life's dark and cloudy."

"O, I love the Stonyshire side," said Dinah ; " I shouldn't like to set my face towards the countries where they're rich in corn and cattle, and the ground so level and easy to tread ; and to turn my back on the hills where the poor people have to live such a hard life, and the men spend their days in the mines away from the sunlight. It's very blessed on a bleak cold day, when the sky is hanging dark over the hill, to feel the love of God in one's soul.

ADAM BEDE. 223

and carry it to the lonely, bare, stone houses, where there's nothing else to give comfort."

" Eh ! " said Lisbeth, " that's very well for ye to talk, as looks welly like the snowdrop flowers as ha' lived for days an' days when I 'n gathered 'em, wi' nothin' but a drop o' water an' a peep o' daylight;

but th' hungry foulks had better leave th' hungTy country. It makes less mouths for the scant cake. But," she went on, looking at Adam, " donna thee talk o' goin' south'ard or north'ard, an' leavin' thy feyther an' mother i' the churchyard, an' goin' to a country as they know nothin' on. I'll ne'er rest i' my grave if I donna see thee i' th' churchyard of a Sunday."

" Donna fear, mother," said Adam. " If I hadna made up my mind not to go, I should ha' been gone before now."

He had finished his breakfast now, and rose as he was speaking.

" What art goin' to do ?" asked Lisbeth. " Set about thy feyther's coflBn ?"

" No, mother," said Adam ; •' we're going to take the wood to the village, and have it made there."

" Nay, my lad, nay," Lisbeth burst out in an

224 ADAM BEDE.

eager, wailing tone ; " thee wotna let nobody make thy feyther's coffin but thyseu ? Who'd make it so well ? An' him as know'd what good work war, an 's got a son as is th' head o' the village, an' all Treddles'on too, for cleverness/'

" Very well, mother, if that's thy wish, I'll make the coffin at home ; but I thought thee wouldstna like to hear the work going on."

" An' why shouldna I like't ? It's the right thing to be done. An' what's likin' got to do wi't ? It's choice o' mislikins is all I 'n got i' this world. One mossel's as good as another when your mouth's out o' taste. Thee mun set about it now this mornin' fust thing. I winna ha' nobody to touch the coffin but thee."

Adam's eyes met Seth's, which looked from Dinah to him rather wistfully.

" No, mother," he said, " I'll not consent but Seth shall have a hand in it too, if it's to be done at home. I'll go to the village this forenoon, because Mr Burge 'ull want to see me, and Seth shall stay at home and begin the coffin. I can come back at noon, and then he can go."

" Nay, nay," persisted Lisbeth, beginning to cry, " I 'n set my heart on 't as thee shalt ma' thy fey

ADAM BEDE. 225

ther's coffin. Thee 't so stiff an' masterful, thee 't ne'er do as thy mother wants thee. Thee wast often angered wi' thy feyther when he war alive; thee must be the better to 'm, now he's goen'. He'd ha' thought nothin' on "t for Seth to ma's coffin."

" Say no more, Adam, say no more," said Seth gently, though his voice told that he spoke with some effort; " mother's in the right. Ill go to work, and do thee stay at home."

He passed into the workshop immediately, followed by Adam ; while Lisbeth, automatically obeying her old habits, began to put away the breakfast things, as if she did not mean Dinah to take her place any longer. Dinah said nothing, but presently used the opportunity of quietly joining the brothers in the workshop.

They had already got on their aprons and papercaps, and Adam was standing with his left hand on Seths shoulder, while he pointed with the hammer in his right to some boards which they were looking at. Their backs were turned towards the door by which Dinah entered, and she came in so gently that they were not aware of her presence till they heard her voice saying, " Seth Bede !" Seth started, and

they both turned round. Dinah looked as if she VOL. I. P

226 ADAM BEDE.

did not see Adam, and fixed her eyes on Seth's face, saying with calm kindness,

" I won't say farewell. I shall see you again when you come from work. So as I'm at the farm before dark, it will be quite soon enough."

" Thank you, Dinah ; I should like to walk home with you once more. It 11 perhaps be the last time." There was a little tremor in Seth's voice. Dinah put out her hand and said, " Youll have sweet peace in your mind to-day, Seth, for your tenderness and long-suffering towards your aged mother."

She turned round and left the workshop as quickly and quietly as she had entered it. Adam had been observing her closely all the while, but she had not looked at him. As soon as she was gone, he said,

" I don't wonder at thee for loving her, Seth. She's got a face like a lily."

Seth's soul rushed to his eyes and lips : he had never yet confessed his secret to Adam, but now he felt a delicious sense of disburthenment, as ho answered,

" Ay, Addy, I do love her—too much, I doubt. But she doesna love me, lad, only as one child o' God loves another. She'll never love any man as a husband—that's my belief."

ADAM BEDE. 227

" Nay, lad, there's no telling ; thee nmstna lose heart. She's made out of stuff with a finer grain than most o' the women; I can see that clear enough. But if she's better than they are in other things, I canna think she'll fall short of 'em in loving."

No more was said. Seth set out to the village, and Adam began his work on the coffin.

" God help the lad, and me too," he thought, as he lifted the board. " We're like enough to find life a tough job—hard work inside and out. It's a strancje thino^ to thmk of a man as can lift a chair with his teeth, and walk fifty mile on end, trembling and turning hot and cold

at only a look from one woman out of all the rest i' the world It's a mystery we can give no account of; but no more we can of the sprouting o' the seed, for that matter."

CHAPTER XII.

IN THE WOOD.

That same Thursday morning, as Arthur Donnithorne was moving about in his dressing-room, seeing his well-looking British person reflected in the old-fashioned mirrors, and stared at, from a dingy olive-green piece of tapestry, by Pharaoh's daughter and her maidens, who ought to have been minding the infant Moses, he was holding a discussion with himself, which, by the time his valet was tying the black silk sling over his shoulder, had issued in a distinct practical resolution.

" I mean to go to Eagledale and fish for a week or so," he said aloud. " I shall take you with me, Pym, and set off" this morning ; so be ready by half-past eleven."

The low whistle, which had assisted him in arriving at this resolution, here broke out into his loudest ringing tenor, and the corridor, as he hurried along it, echoed to his favourite song from the

ADAM BEDE. 229

" Beggar's OiDera," " AVlieii the heart of a man is oppressed with care." Not an heroic strain ; nevertheless Arthur felt himself very heroic as he strode towards the stables to give his orders about the horses. His own approbation was necessary to him, and it was not an approbation to be enjoyed quite gratuitously; it must be won by a fair amount of merit. He had never yet forfeited that approbation, and he had considerable reliance on his own virtues. No young man could confess his faults more candidly ; candour was one of his favourite virtues ; and how can a man's candom^ be seen in all its lustre unless he has a few failintrs to talk of? But he had an agreeable confidence that his faults were all of a generous kind—

impetuous, warm-blooded, leonine ; never crawling, crafty, reptilian. It was not possible for Arthur Donnithorne to do anything mean, dastardly, or cruel. " Xo ! I'm a devil of a fellow for getting myself into a hobble, but I always take care the load shall fall on my own shoulders." Unhappily there is no inherent poetical justice in hobbles, and they will sometimes obstinately refuse to inflict their worst consequences on the prime offender, in spite of his loudly-expressed wish. It was entirely owing to this deficiency in the scheme

•230 ADAM BEDE.

of things that Artluir had ever brought any one into trouble besides himself. He was nothing, if not good-natured ; and all his pictures of the future, when he should come into the estate, were made up of a prosperous, contented tenantry, adoring their landlord, who would be the model of an English gentleman—mansion in first-rate order, all elegance and high taste—jolly housekeeping—finest stud in Loamshire—purse open to all public objects—in short, everything as different as possible from what was now associated with the name of Donnithorne. And one of the first good actions he would perform in that future should be to increase Irwine's income for the vicarage of Hay slope, so that he might keep a carriage for his mother and sisters. His hearty affection for the Kector dated from the age of frocks and trousers. It was an affection, partly filial, partly fraternal;—fraternal enough to make him like Irwine's company better than that of most younger men, and filial enough to make him shrink strongly from incurring Irwine's disapprobation.

You perceive that Arthur Donnithorne was "a good fellow"—all his good friends thought him such : he couldn't bear to see any one uncomfortable ; he would have been sorry even in his angriest

ADAM BEDE. 231

moods for any harm to happen to his grandfather; and his aunt Lydia herself had the benefit of that soft-heartedness which he bore towards the whole sex. Whether he would have self-mastery enough to be always as harmless and purely beneficent as his good-nature

led him to desire, was a question that no one had yet decided against him : he was but twenty-one, you remember ; and we don't inquire too closely into character in the case of a handsome generous young fellow, who will have property enough to support numerous peccadilloes—who, if he should unfortunately break a man's legs in his rash driving, will be able to pension him handsomely ; or if he should happen to spoil a woman's existence for her, will make it up to her with expensive hon-bons, packed up and directed by his own hand. It would be ridiculous to be plying and analytic in such cases, as if one were inquiring into the character of a confidential clerk. We use round, general, gentlemanly epithets about a young man of birth and fortune ; and ladies, with that fine intuition which is the distinguishing attribute of their sex, see at once that he is "nice." The chances are that he will finish his life without scandalising any one ; a sea-worthy vessel that no one

232 ADAM BEDE.

would refuse to insure. Ships, certainly, are liable to casualties, which sometimes make terribly evident some flaw in their construction, that would never have been discoverable in smooth water ; and many a " good fellow," through a disastrous combination of circumstances, has undergone a like betrayal.

But we have no fair ground for entertaining unfavourable opinions concerning Arthur Donnithorne, who this morning proves himself capable of a prudent resolution founded on conscience. One thing is clear : Nature has taken care that he shall never go far astray with perfect comfort and satisfaction to himself; he will never get beyond that borderland of sin, where he will be perpetually harassed by assaults from the other side of the boundary. He will never be a courtier of Vice, and wear her orders in his button-hole.

It was about ten o'clock, and the sun was shining brilliantly ; everything was looking lovelier for the yesterday's rain. It is a pleasant thing on such a morning to walk along the well-rolled gravel on one's way to the stables, meditating an excursion. But the scent

of the stables, which, in a natural state of things, ought to be among the soothing influences of a man's life, always brought with it

ADAM BEDE. 233

some irritation to Arthur. There was no having his own way in the stables; everything was managed in the stingiest fashion. His grandfather persisted in retaining as head groom an old dolt whom no sort of lever could move out of his old habits, and who was allowed to hire a succession of raw Loamshire lads as his subordinates, one of whom had lately tested a new pair of shears by clipping an oblong patch on Arthur's bay mare. This state of things is naturally embittering; one can put up with annoyances in the house, but to have the stable made a scene of vexation and disgust, is a point beyond what human flesh and blood can be expected to endure long together without danger of misanthropy.

Old John's wooden, deep-wrinkled face was the first object that met Arthur's eyes as he entered the stable-yard, and it quite poisoned for him the bark of the two bloodhounds that kept watch there. He could never speak quite patiently to the old blockhead.

" You must have Meg saddled for me and brought to the door at half-past eleven, and I shall want Rattler saddled for Pym at the same time. Do you hear ?"

'-^34 ADAM BEDK.

" Yes, 1 liear, 1 hear, Ciip'n," said old John, very deliberately, following the young master into the stable. John considered a young master as the natural enemy of an old sei-vant, and young people in general as a poor contrivance for carrying on the world

Arthur went in for the sake of patting Meg, declining as far as possible to see anything in the stables, lest he should lose his temper before breakfast. The pretty creature was in one of the inner stables, and turned her mild head as her master came beside her.

Little Trot, a tiny spaniel, her inseparable companion in the stable, was comfortably curled up on her back.

"Yell, Meg, my pretty girl," said Arthur, patting her neck, "we'll have a glorious canter this mornin'."

"Nay, your hono^r, I donna see as that can be," said John.

"Not be? Why not?"

"Why, she's got lamed."

"Lamed, confound you! what do you mean?"

"Why, th' lad took her too close to Dalton's bosses, an' one on 'em flung out at her, an' she's got her shank bruised o' the near fore-leg."

ADAM BEDE. 235

The judicious historian abstains from narrating precisely what ensued. You understand that there was a great deal of strong language, mingled with soothing: "who-ho's" while the leo^r was examined; that John stood by with quite as much emotion as if he had been a cunningly-carved crab-tree walking-stick, and that Aithur Donnithorne presently repassed the iron gates of the pleasure-ground -without singing as he went.

He considered himself thoroughly disappointed and annoyed. There was not another moment in the stable for himself and his servant besides Meg and Eattler. It was vexatious; just -when he wanted to get out of the way for a week or two. It seemed culpable in Providence to allow such a combination of circumstances. To be shut up at the Chase with a broken arm, when every other fellow in his regiment was enjoying himself at Windsor—shut up with his grandfather, who had the same sort of affection for him as for his parchment deeds! And to be disgusted at every turn with the management of the house and the estate! In such circumstances a

man necessarily gets in an ill-humour, and works off the irritation by some excess or other. " Salkeld would have drunk a bottle

236 ADAM BEDE.

of port every day," he muttered to himself; " but I'm not well-seasoned enough for that. Well, since I can't go to Eagledale, I'll have a gallop on Rattler to Norbume this morning, and lunch with Gawaine."

Behind this explicit resolution there lay an implicit one. If he lunched with Gawaine and lingered chatting, he should not reach the Chase again till nearly five, when Hetty would be safe out of his sight in the housekeeper's room ; and when she set out to go home, it would be his lazy time after dinner, so he should keep out of her way altogether. There really would have been no harm in being kind to the little thing, and it was worth dancing with a dozen ball-room belles only to look at Hetty for half an hour. But perhaps he had better not take any more notice of her ; it might put notions into her head, as Irwine had hinted ; though Arthur, for his part, thought girls were not by any means so soft and easily bruised ; indeed, he had generally found them twice as cool and cunning as he was himself. As for any real harm in Hetty's case, it was out of the question : Arthur Donnithorne accepted his own bond for himself with perfect confidence.

So the twelve o'clock sun saw him galloping towards Norbume ; and by good fortune Halsell

ADAM BEDE. 237

Common lay in his road, and gave him some fine leaps for Rattler. Nothing like " taking" a few bushes and ditches for exercising a demon ; and it is really astonishing that the Centaurs, with their immense advantages in this way, have left so bad a reputation in history.

After this, you will perhaps be surprised to hear, that although Gawaine was at home, the hand of the dial in the courtyard had scarcely cleared the last stroke of three, when Arthur returned through the entrance-gates, got down from the panting Eat tier, and went into the house to take a hasty luncheon. But I believe there have been men since his day w^ho have ridden a long way to avoid a rencontre, and then galloped hastily back lest they should miss it. It is the favourite stratagem of our passions to sham a retreat, and to turn sharp round upon us at the moment we have made up our minds that the day is our own.

" The Cap'n's been ridin' the devil's own pace," said Dalton the coachman, whose person stood out in high relief as he smoked his pipe against the stable wall, when John brought up Rattler.

"An' I wash he'd get the devil to do 's grooming for 'n," growled John.

" Ay ; he'd hev a deal hamabler groom nor what

238 ADAM BEDE.

he lies now," observed Dalton; and the joke appeared to liini so good, that, being left alone upon the scene, he continued at intervals to take his pipe from his mouth in order to wink at an imaginary audience, and shake luxuriously with a silent, ventral laughter ; mentally rehearsing the dialogue from the beginning, that he might recite it with effect in the servants' hall.

When Arthur went up to his dressing-room again after luncheon, it was inevitable that the debate he had had with himself there earlier in the day should flash across his mind; but it was impossible for him now to dwell on the remembrance—impossible to recall the feelings and reflections which had been decisive with him then, any more than to recall the peculiar scent of the air that had freshened liim when he first opened his window. The desire to see Hetty had rushed back like an ill-stemmed current; he was amazed himself at the force with which this trivial fancy seemed to grasp him : he was even rather tremulous as he brushed his hair— pooh! it was riding in

that break-neck way. It was because he had made a serious affair of an idle matter, by thinking of it as if it were of any consequence. He would amuse himself by seeing

ADAM BEDE. 239

Hetty to-day, and get rid of the whole thing from his mind. It was all Irwine's fault. " If Irwine had said nothing, I shouldn't have thought half so much of Hetty as of Meg's lameness." However, it was just the sort of day for lolling in the Hermitage, and he would go and finish Dr Moore's Zeluco there before dinner. The Hermitage stood in Fir-tree Grove—the way Hetty was sure to come in walking— from the Hall Farm. So nothing; could be simpler and more natural: meeting Hetty was a mere circumstance of his walk, not its object.

Arthur's shadow flitted rather faster among the sturdy oaks of the Chase than might have been expected from the shadow of a tired man on a warm afternoon, and it was still scarcely four o'clock when he stood before the tall narrow gate leading into the delicious labyrinthine wood which skirted one side of the Chase, and which was called Fir-tree Grove, not because the firs were many, but because they were few. It was a wood of beeches and limes, with here and there a light, silver-stemmed birch—^just the sort of wood most haunted by the nymphs ; you see their white sunlit limbs gleaming athwart the boughs, r>r peeping from behind the smooth-sweeping outline

240 ADAM BEDE.

of a tall lime ; you hear their soft liquid laughter— but if you look with a too curious sacrilegious eye, they vanish behind the silvery beeches, they make you believe that their voice was only a running brooklet, perhaps they metamorphose themselves into a tawny squirrel that scampers away and mocks you from the topmost bough. Not a grove with measured grass or rolled gravel for you to tread upon, but with narrow, hollow-shaped, earthy paths, edged with faint dashes of delicate moss— paths which look as if they were

made by the freewill of the trees and underwood, moving reverently aside to look at the tall queen of the white-footed nymphs.

It was along the broadest of these paths that Arthur Donnithorne passed, under an avenue of limes and beeches. It was a still afternoon—the golden light was lingering languidly among the upper boughs, only glancing down here and there on the purple pathway and its edge of faintly-sprinkled moss : an afternoon in which destiny disguises her cold awful face behind a hazy radiant veil, encloses us in warm downy wings, and poisons us with violet-scented breath. Arthur strolled along carelessly, with a book under his arm, but not looking

ADAM BEDE. 241

on the ground as meditative men are apt to do ; his eyes would fix themselves on the distant bend in the road, beyond which a little figure must surely appear before long. Ah, there she comes : first, a bright patch of colour, like a tropic bird among the boughs, then a tripping figure, with a round hat on, and a small basket under her arm; then a deepblushing, almost frightened, but bright-smiling girl, making her curtsy with a fluttered yet happy glance, as Arthur came up to her. If Arthur had had time to think at all, he would have thought it strange that he should feel fluttered too, be conscious of blushing too—in fact, look and feel as foolish as if he had been taken by surprise instead of meeting just what he expected. Poor things ! It was a pity they were not in that golden age of childhood when they would have stood face to face, eyeing each other with timid liking, then given each other a little butterfly kiss, and toddled off to play together. Arthur would have gone home to his silk-curtained cot, and Hetty to her home-spun pillow, and both would have slept without dreams, and to-morrow would have been a life hardly conscious of a yesterday.

Arthur turned round and walked by Hetty's side

VOL. I. Q

242 ADAM BEDE.

without giving a reason. They were alone together for the first time. What an overpowering presence that first privacy is ! He actually dared not look at this little buttermaker for the first minute or two. As for Hetty, her feet rested on a cloud, and she was borne along by warm zephyrs ; she had forgotten her rose-coloured ribbons; she was no more conscious of her limbs than if her childish soul had passed into a water-lily, resting on a liquid bed, and warmed by the midsummer sunbeams. It may seem a contradiction, but Arthur gathered a certain carelessness and confidence from his timidity; it was an entirely different state of mind from what he had expected in such a meeting with Hetty; and full as he was of vague feeling, there was room, in those moments of silence, for the thought that his previous debates and scruples were needless.

" You are quite right to choose this way of coming to the Chase," he said at last, looking down at Hetty, "it is so much prettier as well as shorter than coming by either of the lodges."

"Yes, sir," Hetty answered, with a tremulous, almost whispering voice. She didn't know one bit how to speak to a gentleman like Mr Arthur, and her very vanity made her more coy of speech.

ADAM BEDE. 243

" Do you come every week to see Mrs Pomfret ? "

" Yes, sii-, every Thursday, only when she's got to go out with Miss Donnithorne."

" And she's teaching you something, is she ?"

" Yes, sir, the lace-mending as she learnt abroad, and the stocking-mending—it looks just like the stocking, you can't tell it's been mended ; and she teaches me cutting-out too."

" What, are you going to be a lady's-maid ?"

" I should like to be one very much indeed." Hetty spoke more audibly now, but still rather tremulously; she thought, perhaps she seemed as stupid to Captain Donnithorne as Luke Britton did to her.

" I suppose Mrs Pomfret always expects you at this time ?"

" She expects me at four o'clock. I'm rather late to-day, because my aunt couldn't spare me ; but the regular time is four, because that gives us time before Miss Donnithorne's bell rings."

" Ah, then, I must not keep you now, else I should like to show you the Hermitage. Did you ever see it ? "

" No, sir."

" This is the walk where we turn up to it. But

244 ADAM BEDE.

"we must not go now. I'll show it you some other time, if you'd like to see it"

" Yes, please, sir"

" Do you always come back this way in the evening, or are you afraid to come so lonely a road ? "

" O no, sir, it's never late ; I always set out by eight o'clock, and it's so light now in the evening. My aunt would be angry with me if I didn't get home before nine"

" Perhaps Craig, the gardener, comes to take care of you ? "

A deep blush overspread Hetty's face and neck. " I'm sure he doesn't; I'm sure he never did; I wouldn't let him ; I don't like him," she said hastily, and the tears of vexation had come so fast, that before she had done speaking a bright drop rolled down her hot cheek. Then she felt ashamed to death that she was crying, and for

one long instant her happiness was all gone. But in the next she felt an arm steal round her, and a gentle voice said,

" Why, Hetty, what makes you cry ? I didn't mean to vex you. I wouldn't vex you for the world, you little blossom. Come, don't cry; look at me, else I shall think you won't forgive me."

Arthur had laid his hand on the soft arm that

ADAM BEDE. 245

was nearest to him, and was stooping towards Hetty with a look of coaxing entreaty. Hetty lifted her long dewy lashes, and met the eyes that were bent towards her with a sweet, timid, beseeching look. What a space of time those three moments were, while their eyes met and his arms touched her ! Love is such a simple thing when we have only one-and-twenty summers and a sweet girl of seventeen trembles under our glance, as if she were a bud first opening her heart with wondering rapture to the morning. Such young unfurrowed souls roll to meet each other like two velvet peaches that touch softly and are at rest; they mingle as easily as two brooklets that ask for nothing but to entwine themselves and ripple with ever-interlacing curves in the leafiest hiding-places. While Arthur gazed into Hetty's dark beseeching eyes, it made no difference to him what sort of English she spoke ; and even if hoops and powder had been in fashion, he would very likely not have been sensible just then that Hetty wanted those signs of high breeding.

But they started asunder with beating hearts : something had fallen on the ground with a rattling noise ; it was Hetty's basket; all her little workwoman's matters were scattered on the path, some

246 ADAM BEDE.

of them showing a capability of rolling to great lengths. There was much to be done in picking up, and not a word was spoken ; but when Arthur hung the basket over her arm again, the poor child felt a

strange difference in his look and manner. He just pressed her hand, and said with a look and tone that were almost chilling to her,

" I have been hindering you; I must not keep you any longer now. You will be expected at the house. Good-by."

Without waiting for her to speak, he turned away from her, and hurried back towards the road that led to the Hermitage, leaving Hetty to pursue her way in a strange dream, that seemed to have begun in bewildering delight, and was now passing into contrarieties and sadness. Would he meet her again as she came home ? Why had he spoken almost as if he were displeased with her ? and then run away so suddenly ? She cried, hardly knowing why.

Arthur too was very miserable, but his feelings were lit up for him by a more distinct consciousness. He hurried to the Hermitage, which stood in the heart of the wood, unlocked the door with a hasty wrench, slammed it after him, pitched Zeluco into the most

ADAM BEDE. 247

distant corner, and, thrusting his right hand into his pocket, first walked four or five times up and down the scanty length of the little room, and then seated himself on the ottoman in an uncomfortable, stiff way, as we often do when we wish not to abandon ourselves to feeling.

He was getting in love with Hetty—that was quite plain. He was ready to pitch everything else —no matter where—for the sake of surrendering himself to this delicious feeling which had just disclosed itself. It was no use blinking the fact now —they would get too fond of each other, if he went on taking notice of her—and what would come of it ? He should have to go away in a few weeks, and the poor little thing would be miserable. He must not see her alone again ; he must keep out of her way. What a fool he was for coming back from Gawaine's !

He got up and threw open the windows, to let in the soft breath of the afternoon, and the healthy scent of the firs that made a belt round the Hermitage. The soft air did not help his resolutions, as he leaned out and looked into the leafy distance. But he considered his resolution sufficiently fixed : there was no need to debate with himself any longer. He

248 ADAM BEDE.

had made up his mind not to meet Hetty again ; and now he might give himself up to thinking how immensely agreeable it would be if circumstances were different—how pleasant it would have been to meet her this evening as she came back, and put his arm round her again and look into her sweet face. He wondered if the dear little thing; were thinking: of him too—twenty to one she was. How beautiful her eyes were with the tear on their lashes ! He would like to satisfy his soul for a day with looking at^them, and he must see her again :—he must see her, simply to remove any false impression from her mind about his manner to her just now. He would behave in a quiet, kind way to her—just to prevent her from going home with her head full of wrong fancies. Yes, that would be the best thing to do, after all.

It was a long while—more than an hour—before Arthur had brought his meditations to this point; but once arrived there, he could stay no longer at the Hermitage. The time must be filled up with movement until he should see Hetty again. And it was already late enough to go and dress for dinner, for his grandfather's dinner-hour was six.

CHAPTER XIII.

EVEXING IN THE WOOD.

It happened that -Mrs Pomfret had had a slight quarrel ■v\ith Mrs Best, the housekeeper, on this Thursday morning—a fact which had two consequences highly convenient to Hetty. It caused Mrs Pomfret to have tea sent up to her own room, and it inspired that exemplary lady's-maid with so lively a recollection of former passages in Mrs

Best's conduct, and of dialogues in which Mrs Best had decidedly the inferiority as an interlocutor with Mrs Pomfret, that Hetty required no more presence of mind than was demanded for using her needle and throwing in an occasional "yes" or "no." She would have wanted to put on her hat earlier than usual; only she had told Captain Donnithorne that she usually set out about eight o'clock, and if he should go to the Grove again expecting to see her, and she should be gone would he come? Her little butterfly soul fluttered

250 ADAM BEDE.

incessantly between memory and dubious expectation. At last the minute-hand of the old-fashioned brazen-faced timepiece was on the last quarter to eight, and there was every reason for its being time to get ready for departure. Even Mrs Pomfret's preoccupied mind did not prevent her from noticing what looked like a new flush of beauty in the little thing as she tied on her hat before the looking-glass.

"That child gets prettier and prettier every day, I do believe," was her inward comment. "The more's the pity! She'll get neither a place nor a husband any the sooner for it. Sober well-to-do men don't like such pretty wives. When I was a girl, I was more admired than if I'd been so very pretty. However, she's reason to be grateful to me for teaching her something to get her bread with, better than farmhouse work. They always told me I was good-natured—and that's the truth, and to my hurt too, else there's them in this house that wouldn't be here now to lord it over me in the housekeeper's room."

Hetty walked hastily across the short space of pleasure-ground which she had to traverse, dreading to meet Mr Craig, to whom she could hardly have

ADAM BEDE. 251

spoken civilly. How relieved she was when she had got safely under the oaks and among the fern of the Chase! Even then she was as ready to be startled as the deer that leaped away at her approach. She thought nothing of the evening light that lay gently in the grassy

alleys between the fern, and made the beauty of their living green more visible than it had been in the overpowering flood of noon: she thought of nothing that was present. She only saw something that was possible : Mr Arthur Dounithorne coming to meet her again along the Fir-Tree Grove. That was the foreground of Hetty's picture; behind it lay a bright hazy something—days that were not to be as the other days of her life had been. It was as if she had been wooed by a river-god, who might any time take her to his wondrous halls below a watery heaven. There was no knowing what would come since this strange entrancing delight had come. If a chest full of lace and satin and jewels had been sent her from some unknown source, how could she but have thought that her whole lot was going to change, and that to-morrow some still more bewildering joy would befall her ? Hetty had never read a novel: if she had ever seen one, I think the words would have

252 ADAM BEDK

been too hard for her : how then could she find a shape for her expectations ? They were as formless as the sweet languid odours of the garden at the Chase, which had floated past her as she walked by the gate.

She is at another ^o^ate now—that leading; into Fir-tree Grove. She enters the wood, where it is already twilight, and at every step she takes the fear at her heart becomes colder. If he should not come ! O how dreary it was—the thought of going out at the other end of the wood, into the unsheltered road, "without having seen him. She reaches the first turning towards the Hermitage, walking slowly— he is not there. She hates the leveret that runs across the path : she hates everything that is not what she longs for. She walks on, happy whenever she is coming to a bend in the road, for perhaps he is behind it. No. She is beginning to cry: her heart has swelled so, the tears stand in her eyes; she gives one great sob, while the corners of her mouth quiver, and the tears roll down.

She doesn't know that there is another turning to the Hermitage, that she is close against it, and that Arthur Doiniithorne is only a few

yards from her, full of one thought, and a thought of which she only

ADAM BEDE. 253

is the object. He is going to see Hetty again—that is the longing which has been growing through the last three hours to a feverish thirst. Not, of course, to speak in the caressing way into which he had unguardedly fallen before dinner, but to set things right with her by a kindness which would have the air of friendly civility, and prevent her from running away with wrong notions about their mutual relation.

If Hetty had known he was there, she would not have cried; and it would have been better, for then Arthur would perhaps have behaved as wisely as he had intended. As it was, she started when he appeared at the end of the side-alley, and looked up at him with two great drops roiling down her cheeks. What else could he do but speak to her in a soft, soothing tone, as if she were a bright-eyed spaniel with a thorn in her foot ?

" Has something frightened you, Hetty ? Have you seen anything in the wood ? Don't be frightened—I'll take care of you now."

Hetty was blushing so, she didn't know whether she was happy or miserable. To be crying again— what did gentlemen think of girls who cried in that way ? She felt unable even to say " no," but could

254 ADAM BEDE*:.:

only look away from him, and wipe the tears from her cheek. Not before a great drop had fallen on her rose-coloured strings: she knew that quite well.

" Come, be cheerful again. Smile at me, and tell me what's the matter. Come, tell me."

Hetty turned her head towards him, whispered, " I thought you wouldn't come/" and slowly got courage to lift her eyes to him. That

look was too much: he must have had eyes of Egyptian granite not to look too lovingly in return.

" You little frightened bird 1 little tearful rose ! silly pet! You won't cry again, now I'm with you, will you ?"

Ah, he doesn't know in the least what he is saying. This is not what he meant to say. His arm is stealing round the waist again, it is tightening its clasp ; he is bending his face nearer and nearer to the round cheek, his lips are meeting those pouting child-lips, and for a long moment time has vanished. He may be a shepherd in Arcadia for aught he knows, he may be the first youth kissing the first maiden, he may be Eros himself, sipping the lips of Psyche—it is all one.

There was no speaking for minutes after. They walked along with beating hearts till they came

ADAM BEDE. 255

within sight of the gate at the end of the wood. Then they looked at each other, not quite as they had looked before, for in their eyes there was the memory of a kiss.

But already something bitter had begun to mingle itself with the fountain of sweets: already Arthur was uncomfortable. He took his arm from Hetty's waist, and said,

" Here we are, almost at the end of the Grove. I wonder how late it is," he added, pulling out his watch. " Twenty minutes past eight—but my watch is too fast. However, I'd better not go any farther now. Trot along quickly with your little feet, and get home safely. Good-by."

He took her hand, and looked at her half sadly, half with a constrained smile. Hetty's eyes seemed to beseech him not to go away yet; but he patted her cheek and said " Good-by" again. She was obliged to turn away from him, and go on.

As for Arthur, he rushed back through the wood, as if he wanted to put a wide space between himself and Hetty. He would not go to the Hermitage again; he remembered how he had debated with himself there before dinner, and it had all come to nothing—worse than nothing. He walked right on

256 ADAM BEDE.

into the Clise, glad to get out of the Grove, which surely was haunted by his evil genius. Those beeches and smooth limes—there was something enervating in the very sight of them; but the strong knotted old oaks had no bending languor in them—the sight of them would give a man some energy. Arthur lost himself among the narrow openings in the fern, winding about without seeking any issue, till the twilight deepened almost to night under the great boughs, and the hare looked black as it darted across his path.

He was feeling much more strongly than he had done in the morning; it was as if his horse had wheeled round from a leap, and dared to dispute his mastery. He was dissatisfied with himself, irritated, mortified. He no sooner fixed his mind on the probable consequences of giving way to the emotions which had stolen over him to-day—of continuing to notice Hetty, of allowing himself any opportunity for such slight caresses as he had been betrayed into already—than he refused to believe such a future possible for himself. To flirt with Hetty was a very different affair from flirting with a pretty girl of his own station—that was understood to be an amusement on both sides; or, if it became

ADAM BEDE. 257

serious, there was no obstacle to marriage. But this little thing would be spoken ill of directly, if she happened to be seen walking with him; and then those excellent people, the Poysers, to whom a good name was as precious as if they had the best blood in the land in their veins—he should hate himself if he made a scandal of that sort, on the estate that was to be his own some day, and among tenants by whom he liked, above all, to be respected. He could no more

believe that he should so fall in his own esteem than that he should break both his leogs and go on crutches all the rest of his life. He couldn't imagine himself in that position—it was too odious, too unlike him.

And even if no one knew anything about it, they might get too fond of each other, and then there could be nothing but the misery of j^arting, after all. No gentleman, out of a ballad, could marry a farmer's niece. There must be an end to the whole thing at once. It was too foolish.

And yet he had been so determined this morning,

before he went to Gawaine's ; and while he was there

something had taken hold of him and made him

gallop back. It seemed he couldn't quite depend

on his own resolution, as he had thought he could : VOL. I. K

258 ADAM BEDE.

he almost wished his arm would get painful again, and then he should think of nothing but the comfort it would be to get rid of the pain. There was no knowing what impulse might seize him to-morrow, in this confounded place, where there was nothing to occupy him imperiously through the live-long day. AVhat could he do to secure himself from any more of this folly ?

There was but one resource. He would go and tell Irwine—tell him everything. The mere act of telling it would make it seem trivial: the temptation would vanish, as the charm of fond words vanishes when one repeats them to the indifferent. In eveiy way it would help him, to tell Irwine. He would ride to Broxton Rectory the first thing after breakfast to-morrow.

Arthur had no sooner come to this determination than he began to think which of the paths would lead him home, and made as short a walk thither as he could. He felt sure he should sleep now—he had had enough to tire him, and there was no more need for him to think

CHAPTER XIV.

THE EETUKN HOME.

While that parting in the wood was happening, there was a parting in the cottage too, and Lisbeth had stood with Adam at the door, straining her aged eyes to get the last glimpse of Seth and Dinali, as they mounted the opposite slope.

"Eh, T'm loath to see the last on her," she said to Adam, as they turned into the house again. "I'd ha' been willin' t' ha' her about me till I died and went to lie by my old man. She'd make it easier dyin'—she spakes so gentle an' moves about so still. I could be fast sure that pictur was drawed for her i' thy new Bible—th' angel a-sittin' on the big stone by the grave. Eh, I wouldna mind ha'in' a daughter like that; but nobody ne'er marries them as is good for aught."

"WeU, mother, I hope thee wilt have her for a

260 ADAM BEDE.

daughter; for Seth's got a liking for her, and I hope she'll get a liking for Seth in time."

"* Where's th' use o' talkin' a-that'n ? She caresna for Seth. She's goin' away twenty mile aff. How's she to get a likin' form, I'd like to know? No more nor the cake 'ull come wi'out th' leaven. Thy figurin' books might ha' toiild thee better nor that, I should think, else thee mightst as well read the commin print, as Seth allays does."

"Nay, mother," said Adam, laughing, "the fig-ures tell us a fine deal, and we couldn't go far without 'em, but they don't tell us about folks's feelings. It's a nicer job to calculate them. But Seth's as good-

hearted a lad as ever handled a tool, and plenty o' sense, and good-looking too ; and he's got the same way o' thinking as Dinah. He deserves to win her, though there's no denying she's a rare bit o' workmanship. You don't see such women turned off the wheel every day."

" Eh, thee't allays stick up for thy brother. Thee'st been just the same, e'er sin' ye war little uns together. Thee wart allays for halving iverything wi'm. But what's Seth got to do with marr'in', as is on'y three-an'-twenty ? He'd more need t' learn an' lay by sixpence. An' as for his desarvin' her—

ADAM BEDE. 261

she's two 'ear older nor Setli • she's pretty near as old as thee. But that's the way : folks mini allays choose by contrairies, as if they must be sorted like the pork—a bit o' good meat wi' a bit o' offal."

To the feminine mind, in some of its moods, all things that might be, receive a temporary charm from comparison with what is ; and since Adam did not want to marry Dinah himself, Lisbeth felt rather peevish on that score—as peevish as she would have been if he had wanted to marry her, and so shut himself out from Mary Burge and the partnership as effectually as by marrying Hetty.

It was more than half-past eight when Adam and his mother were talking in this way, so that when, about ten minutes later, Hetty reached the turning of the lane that led to the farmyard gate, she saw Dinah and Seth approaching it from the opposite direction, and waited for them to come up to her. They, too, like Hetty, had lingered a hittle in their walk, for Dinah was trying to speak words of comfort and strength to Seth in these parting moments. But when they saw Hetty, they paused and shook hands : Seth turned homewards, and Dinah came on alone.

" Seth Bede would have come and spoken to

262 ADAM BEDE.

you, my dear," she said, as she reached Hetty, " but he's very full of trouble to-night/'

Hetty answered with a dimpled smile, as if she did not quite know what had been said ; and it made a strange contrast to see that sparkling selfengrossed loveliness looked at by Dinah's calm pitying face, with its open glance which told that her heart lived in no cherished secrets of its own, but in feelings which it longed to share with all the world. Hetty liked Dinah as well as she had ever liked any woman : how was it possible to feel otherwise towards one who always put in a kind word for her when her aunt was finding fault, and who was always ready to take Totty off her hands—little tiresome Totty, that was made such a pet of by every one, and that Hetty could see no interest in at all ? Dinah had never said anything disapproving or reproachful to Hetty during her whole visit to the Hall Farm : she had talked to her a great deal in a serious way, but Hetty didn't mind that much, for she never listened : whatever Dinah might say, she almost always stroked Hetty's cheek after it, and wanted to do some mending for her. Dinah was a riddle to her ; Hetty looked at her much in the same way as one might imagine a little perch

ADAM BEDE. 263

ing bird that could only flutter from bough to bough, to look at the swoop of the swallow or the mounting of the lark; but she did not care to solve such riddles, any more than she cared to know what was meant by the pictures in the " Pilgrim's Progress," or in the old folio Bible that Marty and Tommy always plagued her about on a Sunday.

Dinah took her hand now and drew it under her own arm.

" You look very happy to-night, dear child," she said. "I shall think of you often when I'm at Snowfield, and see your face before me as it is now. It's a stranore thing;—sometimes when I'm quite alone, sitting in my room with my eyes closed, or walking over the hiUs, the people I've seen and known, if it's only been for a few days, are brought before me, and I hear their voices and see them look and

move, almost plainer than I ever did when they were really with me so as I could touch them. And then my heart is drawn out towards them, and I feel their lot as if it was my own, and I take comfort in spreading it before the Lord and resting in His love, on their behalf as well as my own. And so I feel sure you will come before me."

She paused a moment, but Hetty said nothing.

264 ADAM BEDE.

"It has been a very precious time to me," Dinah went on, "last night and to-day—seeing two such good sons as Adam and Seth Bede. They are so tender and thoughtful for their aged mother. And she has been telling me what Adam has done, for these many years, to help his father and his brother: it's wonderful what a spirit of wisdom and knowledge he has, and how he's ready to use it all in behalf of them that are feeble. And I'm sure he has a loving spirit too. I've noticed it often among my own people round Snowfield, that the strong, skilful men are often the gentlest to the women and children; and it's pretty to see 'em carrying the little babies as if they were no heavier than little birds. And the babies always seem to like the strong arm best. I feel sure it would be so with Adam Bede. Don't you think so, Hetty?"

"Yes," said Hetty, abstractedly, for her mind had been all the while in the wood, and she would have found it difficult to say what she was assenting to. Dinah saw she was not inclined to talk, but there would not have been time to say much more, for they were now at the yard-gate.

The still twilight, with its dying western red, and its few faint struggling stars, rested on the

ADAM BEDE. 265

farmyard, where there was not a sound to be heard but the stamping of the cart-horses in the stable. It was about twenty minutes after sunset: the fowls were all gone to roost, and the bull-dog lay

stretched on the straw outside his kennel, with the black-and-tan terrier by his side, when the fallingto of the gate disturbed them, and set them barking, like good officials, before they had any distinct knowledge of the reason.

The barking had its effect in the house, for, as Dinah and Hetty approached, the doorway was filled by a portly figure, with a ruddy, black-eyed face, which bore in it the possibility of looking extremely acute, and occasionally contemptuous, on market-days, but had now a predominant aftersupper expression of hearty good-nature. It is well known that great scholars who have shown the most pitiless acerbity in their criticism of other men's scholarship, have yet been of a relenting and indulgent temper in private life; and I have heard of a learned man meekly rocking the twins in the cradle with his left hand, while with his right he inflicted the most lacerating sarcasms on an opponent who had betrayed a brutal ignorance of Hebrew. Weaknesses and errors must be forgiven—alas! they

26G ADAM BEDE.

are not alien to us—but the man who takes the wrong side on the momentous subject of the Hebrew points must be treated as the enemy of his race. There was the same sort of antithetic mixture in Martin Poyser : he was of so excellent a disposition that he had been kinder and more respectful than ever to his old father since he had made a deed of gift of all his property, and no man judged his neighbours more charitably on all personal matters; but for a farmer, like Luke Britton, for example, whose fallows were not well cleaned, who didn't know the rudiments of hedgmg and ditching, and showed but a small share of judgment in the purchase of winter stock, Martin Poyser was as hard and implacable as the north-east wind. Luke Britton could not make a remark, even on the weather, but Martin Poyser detected in it a taint of that unsoundness and general ignorance which was palpable in all his farming operations. He hated to see the fellow lift the pewter pint to his mouth in the bar of the Koyal George on market-day, and the mere sight of him on the other side of the road brought a severe and critical expression into his

black eyes, as different as possible from the fatherly glance he bent on his two nieces as they approached the door. Mr Poyser had

ADAM BEDE. 267

smoked his evening pipe, and now held his hands in his pockets, as the only resource of a man who continues to sit up after the day's business is done.

" Why, lasses, ye're rather late to-night," he said, when they reached the little gate leading into the causeway. " The mother s begun to fidget about you, an' she's got the little un ill. An' how did you leave th' old woman Bede, Dinah ? Is she much down about the old man ? He'd been but a poor bargain to her this five year."

" She's been greatly distressed for the loss of him," said Dinah; " but she's seemed more comforted to-day. Her son Adam's been at home all day, workincr at his father's coffin, and she loves to have him at home. She's been talking about him to me almost all the day. She has a loving heart, though she's sorely given to fret and be fearful. I wish she had a surer trust to comfort her in her old age."

"Adam's sure enough," said Mr Poyser, misunderstanding Dinah's wish. " There's no fear but he'll yield well i' the threshing. He's not one o' them as is all straw and no grain. I'll be bond for him any day, as he'll be a good son to the last. Did he say he'd be coming to see us soon ? But come in.

"JGS ADAM BEDE.

come in/" he added, making way for them ; " I hadn't need keep y' out any longer."

The tall buildings round the yard shut out a good deal of the sky, but the large window let in abundant light to show every corner of the house-place.

Mrs Poyser, seated in the rocking-chair, which had been brought out of the "right-hand parlour," was trying to soothe Totty to sleep. But Totty was not disposed to sleep ; and when her cousins entered, she raised herself up, and showed a pair of flushed cheeks, which looked fatter than ever now they were defined by the edge of her linen night-cap.

In the large wicker-bottomed arm-chair in the left-hand chimney-nook sat old Martin Poyser, a hale but shrunken and bleached image of his portly black-haired son—his head hanging forward a little, and his elbows pushed backward so as to allow the whole of his fore-arm to rest on the arm of the chair. His blue handkerchief was spread over his knees, as was usual in-doors, when it was not hanging over his head ; and he sat watching what went forward with the quiet outward glance of healthy old age, which, disengaged from any interest in an inward drama, spies out pins upon the floor, follows one's minutest motions with an unexpectant purposeless

ADAM BEDE. 269

tenacity, watches the flickering of the flame or the sun-gleams on the wall, counts the quarries on the floor, watches even the hand of the clock, and pleases itself with detecting a rhythm in the tick.

"What a time o' night this is to come home, Hetty," said Ishs Poyser. "Look at the clock, do ; why, it's going on for half-past nine, an' I've sent the gells to bed this half-hour, and late enough too, when they've got to get up at half after four, and the mowers' bottles to fill, and the baking ; and here's this blessed child wi' the fever for what I know, and as wakeful as if it was dinner-time, and nobody to help me to give her the physic but your uncle, and fine work there's been, and half of it spilt on her nicrht-crown'—it's well if she's swallowed more nor 'ull make her worse instead o' better. But folks as have no mind to be o' use, have allays the luck to be out o' the road when there's anything to be done."

"I did set out before eight, aunt," said Hetty, in a pettish tone, with a slight toss of her head. "But this clock's so much before the clock at

the Chase, there's no telling what time it'll be when I get here."

" What, you'd be wanting the clock set by gentlefolks's time, would you ? an' sit up burn in'

270 ADAM BEDE.

candle, an' lie a-bed wi' the sun a-bakin' you, like a cowcumber i' the frame ? The clock hasn't been put forrard for the first time to-day, I reckon."

The fact was, Hetty had really forgotten the difference of the clocks when she told Captain Donnithorne that she set out at eight, and this, with her lingering pace, had made her nearly half an hour later than usual. But here her aunt's attention was diverted from this tender subject by Totty, who, percei[^]dng at leng-th that the arrival of her cousins was not likely to bring anything satisfactory to her in particular, began to cry " Munny, munny," in an explosive manner.

" Well, then, my pet, mother's got her, mother won't leave her ; Totty be a good dilling, and go to sleep now," said Mrs Poyser, leaning back and rocking the chair, while she tried to make Totty nestle against her. But Totty only cried louder, and said, " Don't yock ! " So the mother, with that wondrous patience which love gives to the quickest temperament, sat U23 again, and pressed her cheek against the linen night-cap and kissed it, and forgot to scold Hetty any longer.

" Come, Hetty," said Martin Poyser, in a conciliatory tone, " go and get your supper i' the

ADAM BEDE. 271

pantry, as the things are all put away ; an' then you can come an' take the little un while your aunt undresses herself, for she won't lie do"vm in bed without her mother. An' I reckon you could eat a bit, Dinah, for they don't keep much of a house down there."

" No, thank you, uncle," said Dinah ; " I ate a good meal before I came away, for Mrs Bede would make a kettle-cake for me."

" I don't want any supper," said Hetty, taking off her hat. " I can hold Totty now, if aunt wants me."

" Why, what nonsense that is to talk," said Mrs Poyser. " Do you think you can live wi'out eatin', an' nourish your inside wi' stickin' red ribbins on your head ? Go an' get your supper this minute, child; there's a nice bit o' cold pudding i' the safe— just what you're fond on."

Hetty complied silently by going towards the pantry, and Mrs Poyser went on, speaking to Dinah.

" Sit down, my dear, an' look as if you knowed what it was to make yourself a bit comfortable i' the world. I warrant the old woman was dad to see you, since you stayed so long ? "

272 ADAM BEDE.

" She seemed to like having me there at last; but her sons say she doesn't like young women about her, commonly ; and I thought just at first she was almost angry with me for going."

" Eh, it's a poor look-out when th' ould foulks doesna like the young uns," said old Martin, bending his head do^vn lower, and seeming to trace the pattern of the quarries with his eye.

"Ay, it's ill livin' in a hen-roost for them as doesn't like fleas," said Mrs Poyser. "■ We've all had our turn at bein' young, I reckon, be't good luck or ill."

" But she must learn to 'commodate herself to young women," said Mr Poyser, " for it isn't to be counted on as Adam and Seth 'ull keep bachelors for the next ten year to please their mother. That 'ud be onreasonable. It isn't right for old nor young nayther to make a bargain all o' their own side. "What's good for one's good all round i'

the long run. I'm no friend to young fellows a-marr'ing afore they know the difference atween a crab an' a apple ; but they may wait o'er long."

" To be sure," said Mrs Poyser ; " if you go past your dinner-time, there'll be little relish o' your meat. You turn it o'er an' o'er wi' your fork, an'

ADAM BEDE. 273

don't eat it after all. You find faut wi' your meat, an' the faut's all i' your own stomach."

Hetty now came back from the pantry, and said, " I can take Totty now, aunt, if you like."

" Come, Rachel," said Mr Poyser, as his wife seemed to hesitate, seeing that Totty was at last nestling quietly, "thee'dst better let Hetty carry her up-stairs, while thee tak'st thy things off. Thee't tired. It's time thee wast in bed. Thee't bring on the pain in thy side again."

" Well, she may hold her if the child 11 go to her," said Mrs Poyser.

Hetty went close to the rocking-chair, and stood without her usual smile, and without any attempt to entice Totty, simply waiting for her aunt to give the child into her hands.

"Wilt go to cousin Hetty, my dilling, while mother gets ready to go to bed ? Then Totty shall go into mother's bed and sleep there all night."

Before her mother had done speaking, Totty had given her answer in an unmistakable manner, by knitting her brow, setting her tiny teeth against her underlip, and leaning forward to slap Hetty on the arm with her utmost force. Then, without speaking, she nestled to her mother again.

VOL. I. s

274 ADAM BEDE.

"Hey, hey!" said Mr Poyser, while Hetty stood without moving, "not go to cousin Hetty? That's like a babby: Totty's a little woman, an' not a babby"

"It's no use tryin' to persuade her," said Mrs Poyser. "She allays takes against Hetty when she isn't well. Happen she'll go to Dinah."

Dinah, having taken off her bonnet and shawl, had hitherto kept quietly seated in the background, not liking to thrust herself between Hetty and what was considered Hetty's proper work. But now she came forward, and putting out her arms, said, "Come, Totty, come and let Dinah carry her upstairs along with mother: poor, poor mother! she's so tired—she wants to go to bed."

Totty turned her face towards Dinah, and looked at her an instant, then lifted herself up, put out her little arms, and let Dinah lift her from her mother's lap. Hetty turned away without any sign of illhumour, and, taking her hat from the table, stood waiting with an air of indifference, to see if she should be told to do anything else.

"You may make the door fast now, Poyser; Alick's been come in this long while," said Mrs Poyser, rising with an appearance of relief from her

ADAM BEDE. 275

low chair. "Get me the matches down, Hetty, for I must have the rushlight burning in my room. Come, father."

The heavy wooden bolts began to roll in the house doors, and old Martin prepared to move, by gathering up his blue handkerchief, and reaching his bright knobbed walnut-tree stick from the corner. Mrs Poyser then led the way out of the kitchen, followed by the grandfather, and Dinah with Totty in her arms—all going to bed by twilight, like the birds. Mrs Poyser, on her way, peeped into the room

where her two boys lay, just to see their ruddy round cheeks on the pillow, and to hear for a moment their light regular breathing.

"Come, Hetty, get to bed," said Mr Poyser, in a soothing tone, as he himself turned to go up-stairs. "You didna mean to be late, I'll be bound, but your aunt's been worried to-day. Good-night, my wench, good-night."

CHAPTER XV.

THE TWO BED-CHAMBEES.

Hetty and Dinah both slept in the second story, in rooms adjoining each other, meagrely furnished rooms, with no blinds to shut out the light, -which was now beginning to gather new strength from the rising of the moon—more than enough strength to enable Hetty to move about and undress with perfect comfort. She could see quite well the pegs in the old painted linen-press on which she hung her hat and gown ; she could see the head of every pin on her red cloth pin-cushion; she could see a reflection of herself in the old-fashioned looking-glass, quite as distinct as was needful, considering that she had only to brush her hair and put on her nightcap. A queer old lookingglass ! Hetty got into an ill-temper with it almost every time she dressed. It had been considered a handsome glass in its day, and had probably been bought into the Peyser family a quarter of a century

ADAM BEDE. 277

before, at a sale of genteel household fumitm-e. Even now an auctioneer could say something for it: it had a great deal of tarnished gilding about it; it had a firm mahogany base, well supplied with drawers, which opened with a decided jerk, and sent the contents leaping out from the farthest corners, without giving you the trouble of reaching them ; above all, it had a brass candle-socket on each side, which would give it an aristocratic air to the very last. But Hetty objected to it because it had numerous dim blotches sprinkled over the mirror, which no rubbing would remove, and because, instead of

swinging backwards and forwards, it was fixed in an upright position, so that she could only get one good view of her head and neck, and that was to be had only by sitting down on a low chair before her dressing-table. And the dressing-table was no dressing-table at all, but a smaU old chest of drawers, the most awkward thing in the world to sit down before, for the big brass handles quite hurt her knees, and she couldn't get near the glass at all comfortably. But devout worshippers never allow inconveniences to prevent them from performing their religious rites, and Hetty this evening was more bent on her peculiar form of worship than usual.

278 ADAM BEDE.

Having taken off her gown and white kerchief, she drew a key from the large pocket that hung outside her jetticoat, and unlocking one of the lower drawers in the chest, reached from it two short bits of wax candle—secretly bought at Treddleston—and stuck them in the two brass sockets. Then she drew forth a bundle of matches, and lighted the candles ; and last of all, a small red-framed shilling looking-glass, without blotches. It was into this small glass that she chose to look first after seating herself. She looked into it, smiling, and turning her head on one side, for a minute, then laid it down and took out her brush and comb from an upper drawer. She was going to let down her hair, and make herself look like that picture of a lady in Miss Lydia Donnithorne's dressing-room. It was soon done, and the dark hyacinthine curves fell on her neck. It was not heavy, massive, merely rippling hair, but soft and silken, running at every opportunity into delicate rings. But she pushed it all backward, to look like the picture, and form a dark curtain, throwing into relief her roimd white neck. Then she put down her brush and comb, and looked at herself, folding her arms before her, still like the picture. Even the old mottled glass couldn't help

ADAM BEDE. 270

sending back a lovely image, none the less lovely because Hetty's stays were not of white satin—such as I feel sure heroines must generally wear—but of a dark greenish cotton texture.

O yes ! she was very pretty : Captain Donnithome thought so. Prettier than anybody about Hayslope—prettier than any of the ladies she had ever seen visitinoj at the Chase—indeed it seemed fine ladies were rather old and ugly—and prettier than Miss Bacon, the miller's daughter, who was called the beauty of Treddleston. And Hetty looked at herself to-night with quite a different sensation from what she had ever felt before ; there was an invisible spectator whose eye rested on her like morning on the flowers. His soft voice was saying over and over again those pretty things she had heard in the wood ; his arm was round her, and the delicate rose-scent of his hair was with her still. The vainest woman is never thoroughly conscious of her own. beauty till she is loved by the man who sets her owi\ passion vibrating in return.

But Hetty seemed to have made up her mind that something was wanting, for she got up and reached an old black lace scarf out of the linen-press and a pair of large earrings out of the sacred drawer

280 ADAM BEDE.

from which she had taken her candles. It was an old, old scarf, fiill of rents, but it would make a becoming border romid her shoulders, and set off the whiteness of her upper arm. And she would take out the little earrings she had in her ears— oh, how her aunt had scolded her for having her ears bored !—and put in those large ones : they were but coloured glass and gilding; but, if you didn't know what they were made of, they looked just as well as what the ladies wore. And so she sat down again, with the large earrings in her ears, and the black lace scarf adjusted round her shoulders. She looked down at her arms : no arms could be prettier down to a little way below the elbow—they were white and plump, and dimpled to match her cheeks; but towards the wrist, she thought with vexation that they were coarsened by butter-making, and other work that ladies never did.

Captain Donnithome couldn't like her to go on doing work: he would like to see her in nice clothes, and thin shoes and white stockings, perhaps with silk clocks to them ; for he must love her very much—

no one else had ever put his arm round her and kissed her in that way. He would want to marry her, and make a lady of her—she could

ADAM BEDE. 281

hardly dare to shape the thought—yet how else could it be? Many had done her quite secretly, as Mr James, the Doctor's assistant, married the Doctor's niece, and nobody ever found it out for a long while after, and then it was of no use to be angry. The Doctor had told her all about it in Hetty's hearing. She didn't know how it would be, but it was quite plain the old Squire could never be told anything about it, for Hetty was ready to faint with awe and fright if she came across him at the Chase. He might have been earth-born, for what she knew: it had never entered her mind that he had been young like other men—he had always been the old Squire at whom everybody was frightened. O it was impossible to think how it would be! But Captain Donnithorne would know; he was a great gentleman, and could have his way in everything, and could buy everything he liked. And nothing could be as it had been again: perhaps some day she should be a grand lady, and ride in her coach, and dress for dinner in a brocaded silk, with feathers in her hair and her dress sweeping the ground, like Miss Lydia and Lady Dacey, when she saw them going into the dining-room one evening, as she peeped through the little round window in the lobby;

282 ADAM BEDE.

only she should not be old and ugly like Miss Lydia, or all the same thickness like Lady Dacey, but very pretty, with her hair done in a great many different ways, and sometimes in a pink dress, and sometimes in a white one—she didn't know which she liked best; and Mary Burge and everybody would perhaps see her going out in her carriage—or rather, they would hear of it: it was impossible to imagine these things happening at Hay slope in sight of her aunt. At the thought of all this splendour, Hetty got up from her chair, and in doing so caught the little red-framed glass with the edge of her scarf, so that it fell with a bang on the floor; but she was too eagerly occupied with her vision to care about picking it up; and after a

momentary start, began to pace with a pigeon-like stateliness backwards and forwards along her room, in her coloured stays and coloured skirt, and the old black lace scarf round her shoulders, and the great glass earrings in her ears.

How pretty the little puss looks in that odd dress! It would be the easiest folly in the world to fall in love with her: there is such a sweet baby-like roundness about her face and figure ; the delicate dark rings of hair lie so charmingly about her ears

ADAM BEDE. 283

and neck ; her great dark eyes with their long eyelashes touch one so strangely, as if an imprisoned frisky sprite looked out of them.

Ah, what a prize the man gets who wins a sweet bride like Hetty! How the men envy him who come to the wedding breakfast, and see her hanging on his arm in her white lace and orange blossoms. The dear young, round, soft, flexible thing ! Her heart must be just as soft, her temper just as free from angles, her character just as pliant. If anything- ever o-oes wronc^, it must be the husband's fault there : he can make her what he likes, that is plain. And the lover himself thinks so too: the little darling is so fond of him, her little vanities are so bewitching, he wouldn't consent to her being a bit wiser; those kitten-like glances and movements are just what one wants to make one's hearth a paradise. Every man under such circumstances is conscious of being a great physiognomist. Nature, he knows, has a language of her own, which she uses with strict veracity, and he considers himself an adept in the language. Nature has written out his bride's character for him in those exquisite lines of cheek and lip and chin, in those eye-hds delicate as petals, in those long lashes curled like the stamen

284 ADAM BEDE.

of a flower, in the dark liquid depths of those wonderful eyes. How she will dote on her children ! She is almost a child herself, and the little pink round thinos will hanti; about her like florets round the

central flower; and the husband will look on, smiling benignly, able, whenever he chooses, to withdraw into the sanctuary of his wisdom, towards which his sweet wife will look reverently, and never lift the curtain. It is a marriage such as they made in the golden age, when the men were all wise and majestic, and the women all lovely and loving.

It was very much in this way that our friend Adam Bede thought about Hetty ; only he put his thoughts into different words. If ever she behaved with cold vanity towards him, he said to himself, it is only because she doesn't love me well enough ; and he was sure that her love, whenever she gave it, would be the most precious thing a man could possess on earth. Before you despise Adam as deficient in penetration, pray ask yourself if you were ever predisposed to believe evil of any pretty woman—if you ever could, without hard headbreaking demonstration, believe evil of the one supremely pretty woman who has bewitched you. No : people who love downy peaches are apt not to

ADAM BEDE. 285

think of the stone, and sometimes jar their teeth terribly against it

Arthur Donnithorne, too, had the same sort of notion about Hetty, so far as he had thought of her nature at all. He felt sure she was a dear, affectionate, good little thing. The man who awakes the wondering tremulous passion of a young girl always thinks her affectionate; and if he chances to look forward to future years, probably imagines himself being virtuously tender to her, because the poor thing is so cliaingly fond of him. God made these dear women so — and it is a convenient arrangement in case of sickness.

After all, I believe the wisest of us must be beguiled in this way sometimes, and must think both better and worse of people than they deserve. Nature has her language, and she is not unvaracious; but we don't know all the intricacies of her syntax just yet, and in a hasty reading we may happen to extract the very opposite of her real meaning. Long dark eyelashes, now : what can be more exquisite ? I

find it impossible not to expect some depth of soul behind a deep grey eye with a long dark eyelash, in spite of an experience which has shown me that they may go along with deceit,

286 ADAM BEDE.

peculation, and stupidity. But if, in the reaction of disgust, I have betaken myself to a fishy eye, there has been a surprising similarity of result. One begins to suspect at length that there is no direct correlation between eyelashes and morals; or else, that the eyelashes express the disposition of the fair one's grandmother, which is on the whole less important to us.

No eyelashes could be more beautiful than Hetty's, and now, while she walks with her pigeonlike stateliness along the room and looks down on her shoulders bordered by the old black lace, the dark fringe shows to perfection on her pink cheek. They are but dim ill-defined pictures that her narrow bit of an imagination can make of the future; but of every picture she is the central figure, in fine clothes; Captain Donnithorne is very close to her, putting his arm round her, perhaps kissing her, and everybody else is admiring and envying her—especially Mary Burge, whose new print dress looks very contemptible by the side of Hetty's resplendent toilette. Does any sweet or sad memory mingle with this dream of the future—any loving thought of her second parents—of the children she had helped to tend—of any

ADAM BEDE. 287

youthful companion, any pet animal, any relic of her own childhood even? Not one. There are some plants that have hardly any roots: you may tear them from their native nook of rock or wall, and just lay them over your ornamental flower-pot, and they blossom none the worse. Hetty could have cast all her past life behind her and never cared to be reminded of it again. I think she had no feeling at all towards the old house, and did not like the Jacob's Ladder and the long row of hollyhocks in the garden better than other flowers—perhaps not so well. It was wonderful how little she seemed to care

about waiting on her uncle, who had been a good father to her : she hardly ever remembered to reach him his pipe at the right time without being told, unless a visitor happened to be there, who would have a better opportunity of seeing her as she walked across the hearth. Hetty did not understand how anybody could be very fond of middle-aged people. And as for those tiresome children, Marty and Tommy and Totty, they had been the very nuisance of her life—as bad as buzzing insects that will come teasing you on a hot day when you want to be quiet. Marty, the eldest, was a baby when she first came to the farm, for the children born before him

288 ADAM BEDE.

had died, and so Hetty had had them all three, one after the other, toddling by her side in the meadow, or playing about her on wet days in the halfempty rooms of the large old house. The boys were out of hand now, but Totty was still a day-long plague, worse than either of the others had been, because there was more fuss made about her. And there was no end to the making and mending of clothes. Hetty would have been glad to hear that she should never see a child again; they were worse than the nasty little lambs that the shepherd was always bringing in to be taken special care of in lambing time; for the lambs were got rid of sooner or later. As for the young chickens and turkeys, Hetty would have hated the very word "hatching," if her aunt had not bribed her to attend to the young poultry by promising her the proceeds of one out of every brood. The round downy chicks peeping out from under their mother's wing never touched Hetty with any pleasure ; that was not the sort of prettiness she cared about, but she did care about the prettiness of the new things she would buy for herself at Treddleston fair with the money they fetched. And yet she looked so dimpled, so charming, as she stooped down to put the soaked

ADAM BEDE. 289

bread under the hen-coop, that you must have been a very acute personage indeed to suspect her of that hardness. Molly, the housemaid, with a turnup nose and a protuberant jaw, was really a

tenderhearted girl, and, as Mrs Poyser said, a jewel to look after the poultry, but her stolid face showed nothing of this maternal delight, any more, than a brown earthenware pitcher will show the light of the lamp within it.

It is generally a feminine eye that first detects the moral deficiencies hidden under the "dear deceit" of beauty: so it is not surprising that Mrs Poyser, with her keenness and abundant opportunity for observation, should have formed a tolerably fair estimate of what might be expected from Hetty in the way of feeling, and in moments of indignation she had sometimes spoken with great openness on the subject to her husband.

"She's no better than a peacock, as 'ud strut about on the wall and spread its tail when the sun shone if all the folks i' the parish was dymg: there's nothing seems to give her a turn i' th' inside, not even when we thought Totty had tumbled into the pit. To think o' that dear cherub ! And we found her wi' her little shoes stuck i' the mud an' crying

VOL. L T

290 ADAM BEDE.

fit to break her heart by the far horse-pit. But Hetty niver minded it, I could see, though she's been at the nussin' o' the chikl iver since it was a babby. It's my belief her heart's as hard as a pibble."

"Nay, nay," said Mr Poyser, "thee mustn't judge Hetty too hard. Them young gells are like th' miripe grain ; they'll make good meal by-andby, but they're squashy as yit. Thee 't see Hetty '11 be all right when she's got a good husband an' children of her own."

"I don't want to be hard upo' the gell. She's got cliver fingers of her own, and can be useful enough when she likes, and I should miss her wi' the butter, for she's got a cool hand. An' let be what may, I'd strive to do my part by a niece o' yours, an' that I've done: for I've taught her everything as belongs to a house, an' I've told her her

duty often enough, though, God knows, I've no breath to spare, an' that catchin' pain comes on dreadful by times. Wi' them three gells in the house I'd need have twice the strength, to keep 'em up to their work. It's like having roast meat at three fires; as soon as you've basted one, another's buruin'."

ADAM BEDE. 291

Hetty stood sufficiently in awe of her aunt to be anxious to conceal from her so much of her vanity as could be hidden without too gi'eat a sacrifice. She could not resist spending her money in bits of finery which Mrs Poyser disapproved; but she would have been ready to die with shame, vexation, and fright, if her aunt had this moment opened the door, and seen her with her bits of candle lighted, and strutting about decked in her scarf and earrings. To prevent such a surprise, she always bolted her door, and she had not forgotten to do so to-night. It was well: for there now came a light tap, and Hetty, with a leaping heart, rushed to blow out the candles and throw them into the drawer. She dare not stay to take out her earrings, but she threw off her scarf, and let it fall on the floor, before the light tap came again. We shall know how it was that the light tap came, if we leave Hetty for a short time, and return to Dinah, at the moment when she had delivered Totty to her mother's arms, and was come up-stairs to her bedroom, adjoining Hetty's.

Dinah delighted in her bedroom window. Being on the second story of that tall house, it gave her a wide view over the fields. The thickness of the wall formed a broad step about a yard below the window.

292 ADAM BEDE.

where she could place her chair. And now the first thing she did, on entering her room, was to seat herself in this chair, and look out on the peaceful fields beyond which the large moon was rising, just above the hedgerow elms. She liked the pasture best, where the milch cows were lying, and next to that the meadow where the grass was half mown, and lay in silvered sweeping lines. Her heart was

very full, for there was to be only one more night on which she would look out on those fields for a long time to come; but she thought little of leaving the mere scene, for to her, bleak Snowfield had just as many charms: she thought of all the dear people whom she had learned to care for among these peaceful fields, and who would now have a place in her loving remembrance for ever. She thought of the struggles and the weariness that might lie before them in the rest of their life's journey, when she would be away from them and know nothing of what was befalling them ; and the pressure of this thought soon became too strong for her to enjoy the unresponding stillness of the moonlit fields. She closed her eyes, that she might feel more intensely the presence of a Love and Sympathy deeper and more tender than was breathed from the earth and sky. That was often Dinah's

ADAM BEDE. 293

mode of praying in solitude. Simply to close her eyes, and to feel herself enclosed by the Divine Presence ; then gradually her fears, her yearning anxieties for others, melted away like ice-crystals in a warm ocean. She had sat in this way perfectly still, with her hands crossed on her lap, and the pale light resting on her calm face, for at least ten minutes, when she was startled by a loud sound, apparently of something falling in Hetty's room. But like all sounds that fall on our ears in a state of abstraction, it had no distinct character, but was simply loud and startling, so that she felt uncertain whether she had interpreted it rightly. She rose and listened, but all was quiet afterwards, and she reflected that Hetty might merely have knocked something down in getting into bed. She began slowly to undress ; but now, owing to the suggestions of this sound, her thoughts became concentrated on Hetty : that sweet young thing, with life and all its trials before her—the solemn daily duties of the wife and mother—and her mind so unprepared for them all ; bent merely on little foolish, selfish pleasures, Uke a child hugging its toys in the beginning of a long toilsome journey, in which it \sill have to bear hunger and cold and unsheltered darkness.

294 ADAM BEDE.

Dinah felt a double care for Hetty, because she shared Seth's anxious interest in his brother's lot, and she had not come to the conclusion that Hetty did not love Adam well enough to marry him. She saw too clearly the absence of any warm, self-devoting love in Hetty's nature, to regard the coldness of her behaviour towards Adam as any indication that he was not the man she would like to have for a husband. And this blank in Hetty's nature, instead of exciting Dinah's dislike, only touched her with a deeper pity: the lovely face and form affected her as beauty always affects a pure and tender mind, free from selfish jealousies : it was an excellent divine gift, that gave a deeper pathos to the need, the sin, the sorrow with which it was mingled, as the canker in a lily-white bud is more grievous to behold than in a common pot-herb.

By the time Dinah had undressed and put on her night-gown, this feeling about Hetty had gathered a painful intensity ; her imagination had created a thorny thicket of sin and sorrow, in which she saw the poor thing struggling torn and bleeding, looking; with tears for rescue and finding none. It was in this way that Dinah's imagination and sympathy acted and reacted habitually, each height

ADAM BEDE. 295

ening the other. She felt a deep longing to go now and pour into Hetty's ear all the words of tender warning and appeal that rushed into her mind. But perhaps Hetty was already asleep. Dinah put her ear to the partition, and heard still some slight noises, which convinced her that Hetty was not yet in bed. Still she hesitated ; she was not quite certain of a divine direction ; the voice that told her to go to Hetty seemed no stronger than the other voice which said that Hetty was weary, and that going to her now in an unseasonable moment would only tend to close her heart more obstinately. Dinah was not satisfied without a more unmistakable guidance than those inward voices. There was light enough for her, if she opened her Bible, for her to discern the text sufficiently to know what it would say to her. She knew the physiognomy of every page, and could tell on

what book she opened, sometimes on what chapter, -snthout seeing title or number. It was a small thick Bible, worn quite round at the edges. Dinah laid it sideways on the window ledge, where the light was strongest, and then opened it with her forefinger. The first words she looked at were those at the top of the left-hand page: "And they all wept sore, and fell on Paul's

296 ADAM BEDE.

neck and kissed him/" That was enough for Dinah; she had opened on that memorable parting at Ephesus, when Paul had felt bound to open his heart in a last exhortation and warning. She hesitated no longer, but opening her own door gently, went and tapped at Hetty's. We know she had to tap twice, because Hetty had to put out her candles and throw off her black lace scarf; but after the second tap the door was opened immediately. Dinah said, "Will you let me come in, Hetty?" and Hetty, without speaking, for she was confused and vexed, opened the door wider and let her in.

WTiat a strange contrast the two figures made! Visible enough in that mingled twilight and moonlight. Hetty, her cheeks flushed and her eyes glistening from her imaginary drama, her beautiful neck and arms bare, her hair hanging in a curly tangle down her back, and the baubles in her ears. Dmah, covered with her long white dress, her pale face full of subdued emotion, almost like a lovely corpse into which the soul has returned charged with sublimer secrets and a sublimer love. They were nearly of the same height; Dinah evidently a little the taller as she put her arm round Hetty's waist, and kissed her forehead

ADAM BEDE. 297

"I knew you were not in bed, my dear," she said, in her sweet clear voice, wliich was irritating to Hetty, mingling with her o^Yll peevish vexation like music with jangling chains, " for I heard you moving; and I longed to speak to you again tonight, for it is the last but one that I shall be here, and we don't know what may happen to-morrow

to keep us apart. Shall I sit down with you while you do up your hair?"

"O yes," said Hetty, hastily turning round and reaching the second chair in the room, glad that Dinah looked as if she did not notice her earrings.

Dinah sat down, and Hetty began to brush together her hair before twisting it up, doing it with that air of excessive indifference which belongs to confused self-consciousness. But the expression of Dinah's eyes gradually relieved her; they seemed unobservant of all details.

"Dear Hetty," she said, "it has been borne in upon my mind to-night that you may some day be in trouble—trouble is appointed for us all here below, and there comes a time when we need more comfort and help than the things of this life can give. I want to tell you that if ever you are in trouble and need a friend that vnR always feel for

298 ADAM BEDE.

you and love you, you have got that friend in Dinah Morris at Snowfield; and if you come to her, or send for her, shell never forget this night and the words she is speaking to you now. Will you remember it, Hetty?"

"Yes," said Hetty, rather frightened. "But why should you think I shall be in trouble? Do you know of anything?"

Hetty had seated herself as she tied on her cap, and now Dinah leaned forwards and took her hands as she answered—

"Because, dear, trouble comes to us all in this life: we set our hearts on things which it isn't God's will for us to have, and then we go sorrowing; the people we love are taken from us, and we can joy in nothing because they are not with us; sickness comes, and we faint under the burden of our feeble bodies; we go astray and do wrong, and bring ourselves into trouble with our fellow-men. There is no

man or woman born into this world to whom some of these trials do not fall, and so I feel that some of them must happen to you; and I desire for you, that while you are young you should seek for strength from your Heavenly Father, that you may have a support which will not fail you in the evil day."

ADAM BEDE. 299

Dinah paused and released Hetty's hands, that she might not hinder her. Hetty sat quite still; she felt no response within herself to Dinah's anxious affection ; but Dinah's words, uttered with solemn pathetic distinctness, affected her with a chill fear. Her flush had died away almost to paleness ; she had the timidity of a luxurious pleasure-seeking nature, which shrinks from the hint of pain. Dinah saw the effect, and her tender anxious pleading became the more earnest, till Hetty, full of a vague fear that something evil was sometime to befall her, began to cry.

It is our habit to say that while the lower nature can never understand the higher, the higher nature commands a complete view of the lower. But I think the higher nature has to learn this comprehension, as we learn the art of vision, by a good deal of hard experience, often with bruises and gashes incurred in taking things up by the wrong end, and fancying our space wider than it is. Dinah had never seen Hetty affected in this way before, and with her usual benignant hopefulness, she trusted it was the stirring of a divine impulse. She kissed the sobbing thing, and began to cry with her for grateful joy. But Hetty was simply in that excitable state of mind in which there is no calculation:

300 ADAM BEDE.

what turn the feelings may take from one moment to another, and for the first time she became irritated under Dinah's caress. She pushed her away impatiently, and said with a childish sobbing voice,—

" Don't talk to me so, Dinah. Why do you come to frighten me ? I've never done anything to you. "Why can't you let me be ?"

Poor Dinah felt a pang. She was too wise to persist, and only said mildly, "Yes, my dear, you're tired; I won't hinder you any longer. Make haste and get into bed. Good-night."

She went out of the room almost as quietly and quickly as if she had been a ghost; but once by the side of her own bed, she threw herself on her knees, and poured out in deep sUence all the passionate pity that filled her heart.

As for Hetty, she was soon in the wood again— her waking dreams being merged in a sleeping life scarcely more fragmentary and confused.

CHAPTER XYL

LINKS.

Aethtjr Donnithoene, yoiï remember, is under an engagement with himself to go and see Mr Irwine this Friday morning, and he is awake and dressing so early, that he determines to go before breakfast, instead of after. The Rector, he knows, breakfasts alone at half-past nine, the ladies of the family having a different breakfast hour ; Arthur will have an early ride over the hill and breakfast with him. One can say everything best over a meal.

The progress of civilisation has made a breakfast or a dinner an easy and cheerful substitute for more troublesome and disagreeable ceremonies. We take a less gloomy view of our errors now our father confessor listens to us over his egg and coffee. We are more distinctly conscious that rude penances are out of the question for gentlemen in an enlightened age, and that mortal sin is not incompatible "s^ith an

302 ADAM BEDE.

appetite for muffins; an assault on our pockets, which in more barbarous times would have been made in the brusque form of a pistol-shot, is quite a wellbred and smiling procedure now it has

become a request for a loan thrown in as an easy parenthesis between the second and third glasses of claret.

Still, there was this advantage in the old rigid forms, that they committed you to the fulfilment of a resolution by some outward deed : when you have put your mouth to one end of a hole in a stone wall, and are aware that there is an expectant ear at the other end, you are more likely to say what you came out with the intention of saying, than if you were seated with your legs in an easy attitude under the mahogany, with a companion who will have no reason to be surprised if you have nothing particular to say.

However, Arthur Donnithorne, as he winds among the pleasant lanes on horseback in the morning sunshine, has a sincere determination to open his heart to the Rector, and the swirling sound of the scythe as he passes by the meadow is all the pleasanter to him because of this honest purpose. He is glad to see the promise of settled weather now, for getting in the hay, about which the farmers have been fear

ADAM BEDE. 303

fill; and there is something so healthful in the sharing of a joy that is general and not merely personal, that this thought about the hay-test reacts on his state of mind, and makes his resolution seem an easier matter. A man about town might perhaps consider that these influences were not to be felt out of a child's story-book; but when you are among the fields and hedgerows, it is impossible to maintain a consistent superiority to simple natural pleasures.

Arthur had passed the village of Hayslope, and was approaching the Broxton side of the hill, when, at a turning in the road, he saw a figure about a hundred yards before him which it was impossible to mistake for any one else than Adam Bede, even if there had been no grey, tailless, shepherd-dog at his heels. He was striding along at his usual rapid pace ; and Arthur pushed on his horse to overtake him, for he retained too much of his boyish feeling for Adam to miss an opportunity of chatting with him. I will not say that his love for that good fellow did not owe some of its force to the love of patronage:

our friend Arthur liked to do everything that was handsome, and to have his handsome deeds recognised.

Adam looked round as he heard the quickening

304 ADAM BEDE.

clatter of the horse's heels, and waited for the horseman, lifting his paper cap from his head with a bright smile of recognition. Next to his own brother — Seth, Adam would have done more for Arthur Donnithorne than for any other young man in the world. There was hardly anything he would not rather have lost than the two-foot ruler which he always carried in his pocket; it was Arthur's present, bought with his pocket-money when he was a fair-haired lad of eleven, and when he had profited so well by Adam's lessons in carpentering and tuiting, as to embarrass every female in the house with gifts of superfluous thread-reels and round boxes. Adam had quite a pride in the little squire in those early days, and the feeling had only become slightly modified as the fair-haired lad had grown into the whiskered young man. Adam, I confess, was very susceptible to the influence of rank, and quite ready to give an extra amount of respect to every one who had more advantages than himself, not being a philosopher, or a proletaire with democratic ideas, but simply a stout-limbed clever carpenter with a large fund of reverence in his nature, which inclined him to admit all established claims unless he saw very clear grounds for question

ADAM BEDE. 305

in of them. He had no theories about setting the world to rights, but he saw there was a great deal of damage done by building with ill-seasoned timber, —by ignorant men in fine clothes making plans for outhouses and workshops and the like, without knowing the bearings of things,—by slovenly joiners' work, and by hasty contracts that could never be fulfilled without ruining somebody; and he resolved, for his part, to set his face against such doings. On these points he would have maintained his opinion against the largest landed proprietor in Loamshire or Stonyshire either; but he felt that beyond

these it would be better for him to defer to people who were more knowing than himself. He saw as plainly as possible how ill the woods on the estate were managed, and the shameful state of the farm-buildings ; and if old Squii^e Donnithorne had asked him the efi"ect of this mismanagement, he would have spoken his opinion without flinching, but the impulse to a respectful demeanour towards a " gentleman" would have been strong within him all the while. The word " gentleman" had a spell for Adam, and as he often said, he " couldn't abide a fellow who thought he made himself fine by being coxy to ' s betters." I must remind you again, that

VOL. I. U

306 ADAM BEDE.

Adam had the blood of the peasant in his veins, and that since he was in his prime half a century ago, you must expect some of his characteristics to be obsolete.

Towards the young squire this instinctive reverence of Adam's was assisted by boyish memories and personal regard; so you may imagine that he thought far more of Arthur's good qualities, and attached far more value to very slight actions of his, than if they had been the qualities and actions of a common workman like himself. He felt sure it would be a fine day for everybody about Hayslope when the young squire came into the estate—such a generous open-hearted disposition as he had, and an " uncommon" notion about improvements and repairs, considering he was only just coming of age. Thus there was both respect and affection in the smile with which he raised his paper cap as Arthur Donnithorne rode up.

" Well, Adam, how are you?" said Arthur, holdino- out his hand. He never shook hands with any of the farmers, and Adam felt the honour keenly. " I could swear to your back a long way off. It's just the same back, only broader, as when you used to carry me on it. Do you remember ?"

ADAM BEDE. 307

" Ay, sir, I remember. It 'iid be a poor look-out if folks didn't remember what they did and said when they were lads. We should think no more about old friends than we do about new uns, then."

" You're going to Broxton, I suppose ?" said Arthur, putting his horse on at a slow pace while Adam walked by his side. " Are you going to the Kectory ?"

" No, sir, I'm ooinor to see about Bradwell's barn. They're afraid of the roof pushing the walls out; and I'm going to see what can be done with it, before we send the stuff and the workmen."

" Why, Burge trusts almost everything to you now, Adam, doesn't he? I should think he will make you his partner soon. He will, if he's wise/^

" Nay, sir, I don't see as he'd be much the better off for that. A foreman, if he's got a conscience, and delights in his work, will do his business as well as if he was a partner. I wouldn't give a penny for a man as 'ud drive a nail in slack because he didn't get extra pay for it."

" I know that, Adam ; I know you work for him as well as if you were working for yourself. But you would have more power than you have now, and could turn the business to better account, per

308 ADAM BEDE.

haps. The old man must give up his business some time, and ho has no son ; I suppose he'll want a son-in-law who can take to it. But he has rather grasping fingers of his own, I fancy : I daresay he wants a man who can put some money into the business. If I "were not as poor as a rat, I would gladly invest some money in that way, for the sake of having you settled on the estate. I m sure I should profit by it in the end. And perhaps I shall be better off in a year or two. I shall

have a larger allowance now I'm of age ; and when I've paid off" a debt or two, I shall be able to look about me.'"

"You're very good to say so, sir, and I'm not unthankful. But"—Adam continued in a decided tone—" I shouldn't like to make any offers to Mr Burge, or t' have any made for me. I see no clear road to a partnership. If he should ever want to dispose o' the business, that 'ud be a different matter. I should be glad of some money at a fair interest then, for I feel sure I could pay it off in time."

" Very well, Adam," said Arthur, remembering what Mr Irwine had said about a probable hitch in the love-making between Adam and Mary Burge,

ADAM BEDE. 309

" we'll say no more about it at present. When is youi" father to be buried ?"

" On vSunday, sir ; Mr Irwine's coming earlier on purpose, I shall be glad when it's over, for I think my mother \iU perhaps get easier then. It cuts one sadly to see the gi'ief of old people ; they've no way of working it off; and the new spring brings no new shoots out on the withered tree/'

" Ah, you've had a good deal of trouble and vexation in your life, Adam. I don't think you've ever been harebrained and light-hearted, like other youngsters. You've always had some care on your mind ?"

" Why, yes, sir; but that's nothing to make a fuss about. If we're men, and have men's feelings, I reckon we must have men's troubles. We can't be like the birds, as fly from their nest as soon as they've got their wings, and never know their kin when they see 'em, and get a fresh lot every year. I've had enouo;h to be thankful for ; I 've allavs had health and strength and brains to give me a delight in my work ; and I count it a great thing as I've had Bartle Massey's night-school to go to. He's helped me to knowledge I could never ha' got by myself"

310 ADAM BEDE.

" What a rare fellow you are, Adam!" said Arthur, after a pause, in which he had looked musingly at the big fellow walking by his side. " I could hit out better than most men at Oxford, and yet I believe you would knock me into next week if I were to have a battle with you."

" God forbid I should ever do that, sir," said Adam, looking round at Arthur, and smiling. " I used to fight for fun; but I've never done that since I was the cause o' poor Gil Tranter being laid up for a fortnight. I'll never fight any man again, only when he behaves like a scoundrel. If you get hold of a chap that's got no shame nor conscience to stop him, you must try what you can do by bunging his eyes up."

Arthur did not lau^h, for he was preoccupied with some thought that made him say presently,

" I should think now, Adam, you never have any struggles within yourself. I fancy you would master a wish that you had made up your mind it was not quite right to indulge, as easily as you would knock down a drunken fellow who was quarrelsome with you. I mean, you are never shilly-shally, first making up your mind that you won't do a thing, and then doing it after all ?"

ADAM BEDE. 311

" Well," said Adam slowly, after a moment's hesitation—" no. I don't remember ever being see-saw in that way, when I'd made my mind up, as you say, that a thing was wrong. It takes the taste out o' my mouth for things, when I know I should have a heavy conscience after 'em. I've seen pretty clear, ever since I could cast up a sum, as you can never do what's wrono[^] without breedino[^] sin and trouble more than you can ever see. It's like a bit o' bad workmanship—you never see th' end o' the mischief it'll do. And it's a poor look-out to come into the world to make your fellow-creatures worse off instead o' better. But there's a difference between the thincrs folks call wrong. I'm not for making a sin of every little fool's trick, or bit o' nonsense

anybody may be let into, like some o' them dissenters. And a man may have two minds whether it isn't worth while to get a bruise or two for the sake of a bit o' fun. But it isn't my way to be see-saw about anything : I think my fault lies th' other way. When I've said a thing, if it's only to myself, it's hard for me to go back."

" Yes, that's just what I expected of you," said Arthur. "You've got an iron will, as well as an iron arm. But however strong a man's resolution

312 ADAM BEDE.

may be, it costs him something to carry it out, now and then. We may determine not to gather any cherries, and keep our hands sturdily in our pockets, but we can't prevent our mouths from watering."

" That's true, sir ; but there's nothing like settling with ourselves as there's a deal we must do without i' this life. It's no use looking on life as if it was Treddles'on fair, where folks only go to see shows and get fairings. If we do, we shall find it different. But where's the use o' me talking to you, sir ? You know better than I do."

" I'm not so sure of that, Adam. You've had four or five years of experience more than I've had, and I think your life has been a better school to you than college has been to me."

" Why, sir, you seem to think o' college something like what Bartle Massey does. He says college mostly makes people like bladders—— just good for nothing but t' hold the stuff as is poured into 'em. But he's got a tongue like a sharp blade, Bartle has : it never touches anything but it cuts. Here's the turning, sir. I must bid you good-morning, as you're going to the Rectory."

" Good-by, Adam, good-by."

Arthiu' gave his horse to the groom at the Rectory

ADAM BEDE. 313

gate, and walked along the gravel towards the door which opened on the garden. He knew that the Ector always breakfasted in his study, and the study lay on the left hand of this door, opposite the dining-room. It was a small low room, belonging to the old part of the house—dark with the sombre covers of the books that lined the walls: yet it looked very cheery this morning as Arthur reached the open window. For the morning sun fell aslant on the great glass globe with gold fish in it, which stood on a scagliola pillar in front of the ready-spread bachelor breakfast-table, and by the side of this breakfast-table was a group which would have made any room enticing. In the crimson damask easy-chair sat Mr Irwine, with that radiant freshness which he always had when he came from his morning toilette; his finely-formed plump white hand was playing along Juno's brown curly back; and close to Juno's tail, which was wagging with calm matronly pleasure, the two brown pups were rolling over each other in an ecstatic duet of worrying noises. On a cushion a little removed sat Pug, with the air of a maiden lady who looked on these familiarities as animal weaknesses, which she made as little show as possible of observing. On the table, at Mr Irwine's elbow,

31-4 ADAM BEDE.

lay the first volume of the Foulis JEschylus, which Arthur knew well by sight; and the silver coffeepot, which Carroll was bringing in, sent forth a fragrant steam which completed the delights of a bachelor breakfast.

"Hallo, Arthur, that's a good fellow! You're just in time!" said Mr Irwine, as Arthur paused and stepped in over the low window-sill. "Carroll, we shall want more coffee and eggs, and haven't you got some cold fowl for us to eat with that ham! Why, this is like old days, Arthur; you haven't been to breakfast with me these five years."

"It was a tempting morning for a ride before breakfast," said Arthur, "and I used to like breakfasting with you so, when I was reading with you. My grandfather is always a few degrees colder at breakfast than at any other hour in the day. I think his morning bath doesn't agree with him."

Arthur was anxious not to imply that he came with any special purpose. He had no sooner found himself in Mr Irwine's presence than the confidence which he had thought quite easy before, suddenly appeared the most difficult thing in the world to him, and at the very moment of shaking hands he saw his purpose in quite a new light. How could

ADAM BEDE. 315

he make Irwine understand his position unless he told him those little scenes in the wood; and how could he tell them without looking like a fool? And then his weakness in coming back from Gawaine's, and doing the very opposite of what he intended! Irwine would think him a shilly-shally fellow ever after. However, it must come out in an unpremeditated way; the conversation might lead up to it.

"I like breakfast-time better than any other moment in the day," said Mr Irwine. "No dust has settled on one's mind then, and it presents a clear mirror to the rays of things. I always have a favourite book by me at breakfast, and I enjoy the bits I pick up then so much, that regularly every morning it seems to me as if I should certainly become studious again. But presently Dent brings up a poor fellow who has killed a hare, and when I've got through my 'justicing,' as Carroll calls it, I'm inclined for a ride round the glebe, and on my way back I meet with the master of the workhouse, who has got a long story of a mutinous pauper to tell me; and so the day goes on, and I'm always the same lazy fellow before evening sets in. Besides, one wants the stimulus of sympathy, and I have

316 ADAM BEDE.

never had that since poor D'Oyley left Treddleston. If you had stuck to your books well, you rascal, I should have had a pleasanter prospect before me. But scholarship doesn't run in your family blood."

"No indeed. It's well if I can remember a little inapplicable Latin to adorn my maiden speech in Parliament six or seven years hence."

Cras ingens iterabimus agquor/ and a few shreds of that sort, will perhaps stick to me, and I shall arrange my opinions so as to introduce them. But I don't think a knowledge of the classics is a pressing want to a country gentleman ; as far as I can see, he'd much better have a knowledge of manures. I've been reading your friend Arthur Young's books lately, and there's nothing I should like better than to carry out some of his ideas in putting the farmers on a better management of their land ; and, as he says, making what was a wild country, all of the same dark hue, bright and variegated with corn and cattle. My grandfather will never let me have any power while he lives ; but there's nothing I should like better than to undertake the Stonyshire side of the estate—it's in a dismal condition—and set improvements on foot, and gallop about from one place to another and overlook them. I should

ADAM BEDE. 317

like to know all the labourers, and see them touching their hats to me with a look of good-will."

" Bravo, Arthur; a man who has no feeling for the classics couldn't make a better apology for coming into the world than by increasing the quantity of food to maintain scholars—and rectors who appreciate scholars. And whenever you enter on your career of model landlord may I be there to see. You'd want a portly rector to complete the picture, and take his tithe of all the respect and honour you get by your hard work. Only don't set your heart too strongly on the good-will you are to get in consequence. I'm not sure that men are the fondest of those who try to be useful to them. You know Gawaine has got the curses of the whole neighbourhood upon him about that enclosure. You must make it quite clear to your mind which you are most bent upon, old boy—popularity or usefulness — else you may happen to miss both."

" O ! Gawaine is harsh in his manners ; he doesn't make himself personally agreeable to his tenants. I don't believe there's anything you can't prevail on people to do with kindness. For my part, I

couldn't live in a neighbourhood where I was not respected and beloved; and it's very j^leasant to

318 ADAM BEDE.

go among the tenants here, they seem all so well inclined to me. I suppose it seems only the other day to them since I was a little lad, riding on a pony about as big as a sheep. And if fair allowances were made to them, and their buildings attended to, one could persuade them to farm on a better plan, stupid as they are."

"• Then mind you fall in love in the right place, and don't get a wife who will drain your purse and make you niggardly in spite of yourself. My mother and I have a little discussion about you sometimes : she says, ' Til never risk a single prophecy on Arthur until I see the woman he falls in love with.' She thinks your lady-love will rule you as the moon rules the tides. But I feel bound to stand up for you, as my pupil, you know ; and I maintain that you're not of that watery quality. So mind you don't disgrace my judgment."

Ai'thur winced under this speech, for keen old Mrs Irwine's opinion about him had the disagreeable effect of a sinister omen. This, to be sure, was only another reason for persevering in his intention, and getting an additional security against himself. Nevertheless, at this point in the conversation, he was conscious of increased disinclination to tell his

ADAM BEDE. 319

Story about Hetty. He was of an impressionable nature, and lived a great deal in other people's opinions and feelings concerning himself; and the mere fact that he was in the presence of an intimate friend, who had not the slightest notion that he had had any such serious internal struggle as he came to confide, rather shook his own belief in the seriousness of the struggle. It was not, after all, a thing to make a fuss about; and what could Irwine do for him that he could not do for liimself ? He would go to Eagledale in spite of Meg's lameness—go on Rattler, and let Pym follow as well as he could on

the old hack. That was his thought as he sipped his coffee ; but the next minute, as he was lifting the cup to his lips, he remembered how thoroughly he had made up his mind last night to tell Irwine. No ! he would not be vacillating again—he would do what he had meant to do, this time. So it would be well not to let the personal tone of the conversation altogether drop. If they went to quite indifferent topics, his difficulty would be heightened. It had required no noticeable pause for this rush and rebound of feeling, before he answered,—

" But I think it is hardly an argument against a man's general strength of character, that he should

320 ADAM BEDE.

be apt to be mastered by love. A fine constitution doesn't insure one against small-pox or any other of those inevitable diseases. A man may be very firm in other matters, and yet be under a sort of witchery from a woman/

" Yes ; but there's this difference between love and small-pox, or bewitchment either—that if you detect the disease at an early stage and try change of air, there is every chance of complete escape, without any further development of symptoms. And there are certain alterative doses which a man may administer to himself by keeping unpleasant consequences before his mind: that gives you a sort of smoked glass through which you may look at the resplendent fair one and discern her true outline ; though I'm afraid, by the by, the smoked glass is apt to be missing, just at the moment it is most wanted. I daresay, now, even a man fortified with a knowledge of the classics might be lured into an imprudent marriage, in spite of the warning given him by the chorus in the Prometheus."

The smile that flitted across Arthur's face was a faint one, and instead of following Mr Irwine's playful lead, he said quite seriously —" Yes, that's the worst of it. It's a desperately vexatious thing, that

ADAM BEDE. 321

after all one's reflections and quiet determinations, we should be ruled by moods that one can't calculate on beforehand. I don't think a man ought to be blamed so much if he is betrayed into doing things in that way, in spite of his resolutions/

" Ah, but the moods lie in his nature, my boy, just as much as his reflections did, and more. A man can never do anything at variance with his own nature. He carries within him the germ of his most exceptional action; and if we wise people make eminent fools of ourselves on any particular occasion, we must endure the legitimate conclusion that we carry a few grains of folly to our ounce of wisdom/

" Well, but one may be betrayed into doing things by a combination of circumstances, which one might never have done otherwise/

*' Why, yes, a man can't very well steal a banknote unless the banknote lies within convenient reach ; but he won't make us think him an honest man because he begins to howl at the bank-note for falling in his way/

" But surely you don't think a man who struggles against a temptation into which he falls at last, as bad as the man who never struggles at all ?"

VOL. I. X

322 ADA31 BEDE.

" No, my boy, I pity him, in proportion to his struggles, for they foreshadow the inward sufferings which is the worst form of Nemesis. Consequences are unpitying. Our deeds carry their terrible consequences, quite apart from any fluctuations that went before—consequences that are hardly ever confined to ourselves. And it is best to fix our minds on that certainty, instead of considering what may be the elements of excuse for us. But I never knew you so inclined for moral discussion, Arthur ? Is it some danger of your own that you are considering in this philosophical, general way ?"

In asking this question, Mr Irwine pushed his plate away, threw himself back in his chair, and looked straight at Arthur. He realised he suspected that Arthur wanted to tell him something, and thought of smoothing the way for him by this direct question. But he was mistaken. Brought suddenly and involuntarily to the brink of confession, Arthur shrank back, and felt less disposed towards it than ever. The conversation had taken a more serious tone than he had intended—it would quite mislead Irwine—he would imagine there was a deep passion for Hetty, while there was no such thing. He was

ADAM BEDE. 323

conscious of colouring, and was annoyed at his boyishness.

"'O no, no danger," he said, as indifferently as he could. "I don't know that I am more liable to irresolution than other people; only there are little incidents now and then that set one speculating on what might happen in the future."

Was there a motive at work under this strange reluctance of Arthur's which had a sort of backstairs influence, not admitted to himself? Our mental business is carried on much in the same way as the business of the State: a great deal of hard work is done by agents who are not acknowledged. In a piece of machinery, too, I believe there is often a small unnoticeable wheel which has a great deal to do with the motion of the large obvious ones. Possibly, there was some such unrecognised agent secretly busy in Arthur's mind at this moment—possibly it was the fear lest he might hereafter find the fact of having made a confession to the Rector a serious annoyance, in case he should not be able quite to carry out his good resolutions? I dare not assert that it was not so. The human soul is a very complex thing.

The idea of Hetty had just crossed Mr Irwine's

324 ADAM BEDE.

mmd as he looked inquiringly at Arthur, but his disclaiming, indifferent answer confirmed the thought which had quickly followed—that there could be nothing serious in that direction. There was no probability that Arthur ever saw her except at church, and at her own home under the eye of IMrs Poyser; and the hint he had given Arthur about her the other day had no more serious meaning than to prevent him from noticing her so as to rouse the little chit's vanity, and in this way perturb the rustic drama of her life. Arthur would soon join his regiment, and be far away : no, there could be no danger in that quarter, even if Arthur's character had not been a strong security against it. His honest, patronising pride in the good-will and respect of everybody about him was a safeguard even against foolish romance, still more against a lower kind of folly. If there had been anything sj)ecial on Arthur's mind in the previous conversation, it was clear he was not inclined to enter into details, and Mr Irwine was too delicate to imply even a friendly curiosity. He perceived a change of subject would be welcome, and said—

" By the way, Arthur, at your colonel's birthday fete there were some transparencies, that made a

ADAM BEDE. 325

great effect, in honour of Britannia, and Pitt, and the Loamshii-e Militia, and above all, the 'generous youth,' the hero of the day. Don't you think you should get up something of the same sort to astonish our weak minds ?"

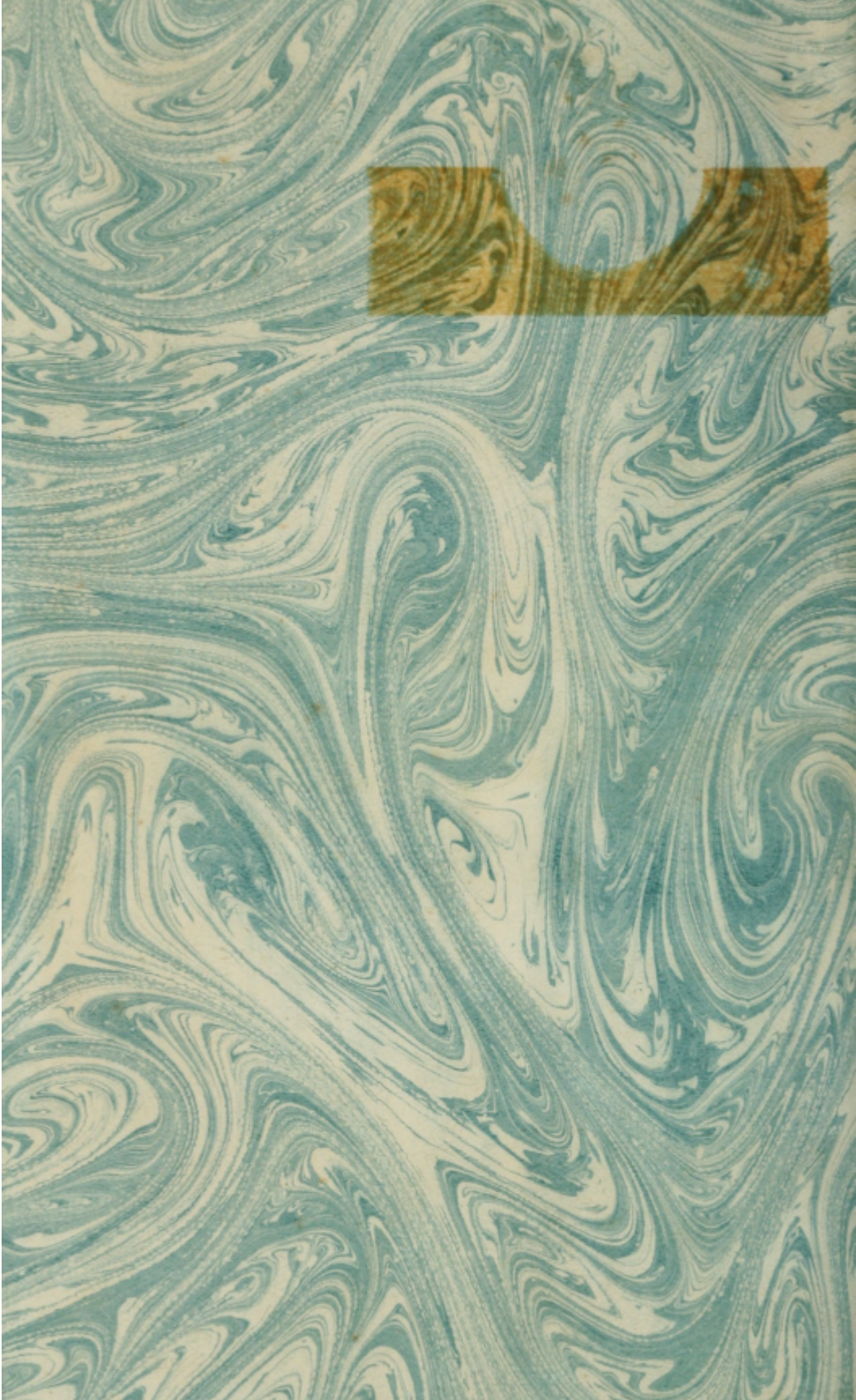
The opportunity was gone, ^yllile Arthur^ was hesitating, the rope to which he might have clung had drifted away—he must trust now to his own swimming^.

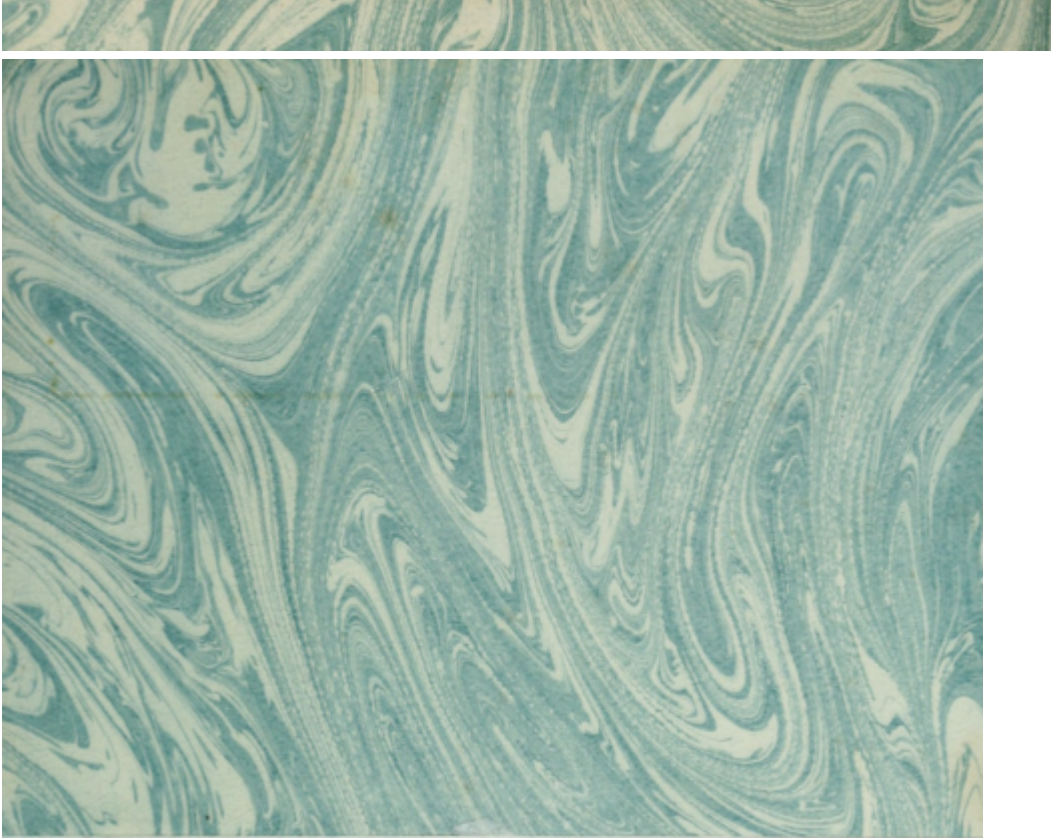
In ten minutes from that time,]Mr Irwine was called for on business, and Arthur, bidding him good-by, mounted his horse again with a sense of dissatisfaction, which he tried to quell by determining to set off for Eagiedale without an hour's delay.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

PRINTED BY WILLIAM BLACKWOOD AND SONS. EDINBURGH.

^





This book is given special protection for the reason indicated below:

Autograph Association Condition Cost

/- Edition

v^Fine binding Format

Giftbook

Illustration

Miniature book

Original binding or covers

Presentation

Scarcity

Subject

L82—5M—9-64—84330-K

i'

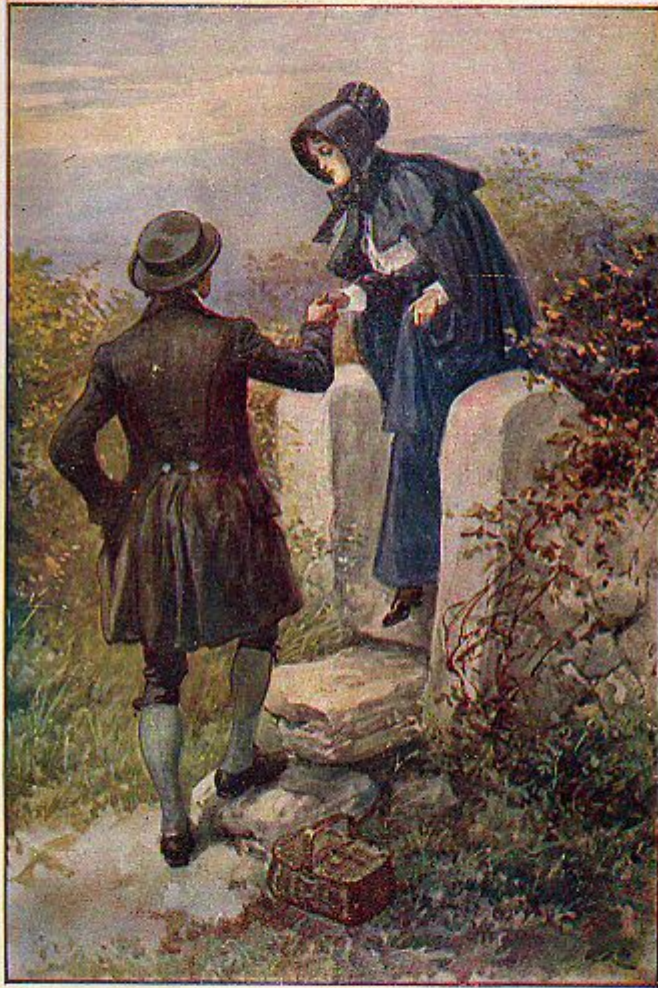
^



>4K3|IH|ltM ' ■

^^W

ADAM BEDE



BY *George Eliot*